This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

https://books.google.com

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
33433050724107

THE KING'S OWN,

1/5 BATTALION, T.F.

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR LENOX & TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

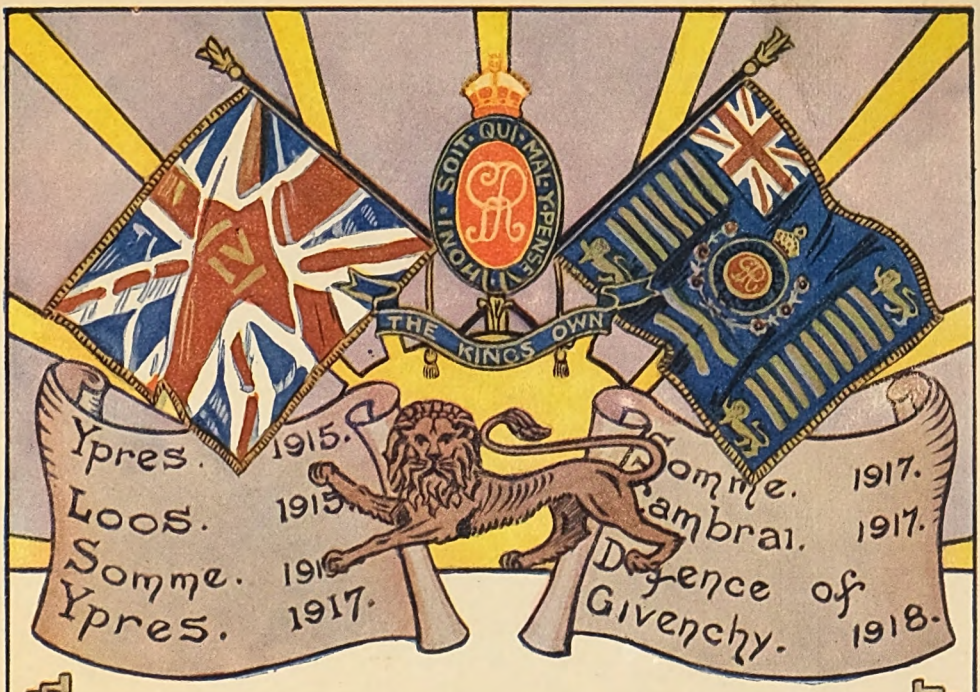
THE KING'S OWN

1/5 BATTALION T.F.

JFF
97- 2866

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



In proud memory of long days and nights in the trenches; of patrols, wiring parties and carrying parties; of supplies brought up and duty done by all ranks in all places; of many hours spent in digging; of days passed under shell fire, machine-gun fire and rifle fire; of raids by night and attacks by day; of a stubborn defence and a glorious advance, and the final overthrow of the enemy; of days, months and years devoted to the service of your King and your Country.

In proud and solemn memory of the Fallen, and of all those who suffered wounds and mutilation in a just and righteous cause.

In proud hope of a glorious and lasting peace; of difficulties to be met and dangers overcome by cool heads and stout hearts; and of generations to come who shall prove themselves worthy of the great deeds of their Fathers.

E G. Hoare Lt-Col

1/5 Bn., The King's Own (Royal Lanc.) Regt.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The KING'S OWN

T.F.

Being a Record of the 1/5th Battalion
The King's Own (Royal Lancaster Regiment)

IN THE

EUROPEAN WAR, 1914-1918

COMPILED BY

ALBERT HODGKINSON,

Captain and Quartermaster, 1/5 King's Own (R. Lanc.)
Regiment, from Battalion Records and his
personal Diary, as a small tribute to
those who maintained the honour
of their inheritance.

Printed by
THE LEWES PRESS, LIMITED,
HIGH STREET, LEWES.
1921.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

(*Photo.: W. & D. Downey, Ltd.*)

HIS MAJESTY KING GEORGE V.

Colonel-in-Chief,

The King's Own Royal Regiment (Lancaster).

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I. PAGE

THE BATTALION IN ENGLAND—August, 1914, to February, 1915 11

CHAPTER II.

EARLY DAYS IN FRANCE—February-April, 1915 14

CHAPTER III.

THE SECOND BATTLE OF YPRES—April-May, 1915 21

CHAPTER IV.

KEMMEL—June-September, 1915 37

CHAPTER V.

THE BATTLE OF LOOS—September, 1915 42

CHAPTER VI.

IN THE FIRST DIVISION—October, 1915, to January, 1916 ... 45

CHAPTER VII.

FORMATION OF THE 55TH DIVISION, ARRAS—February-July, 1916 51

CHAPTER VIII.

THE SOMME—August-September, 1916 58

CHAPTER IX.

BACK TO THE SALIENT—1916-1917 72

CHAPTER X.

JULY 31ST, 1917 90

CHAPTER XI.

SEPTEMBER 20TH, 1917 102

CHAPTER XII.

CAMBRAI—October-November, 1917 107

CHAPTER XIII.

LA BASSEE SECTOR—February, 1918, to April 9th, 1918 ... 119

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV. PAGE
FESTUBERT-GIVENCHY—April 9th, 1918 125

CHAPTER XV.
THE SUMMER OF 1918 131

CHAPTER XVI.
THE ADVANCE—October-November, 1918 138

CHAPTER XVII.
BRUSSELS—December, 1918, to March, 1919 148

CHAPTER XVIII.
GERMANY—April-September, 1919 153

CHAPTER XIX.
HOME AT LAST—October, 1919... 156

MAPS.

1.—DRANOUTRE SECTOR ... ... facing 16
2.—POLYGON WOOD ... ... ,, 20
3.—YPRES, 1915 AND 1917 ... ... ,, 22
4.—GUILLEMONT ... ... ,, 60
5.—FLERS ... ... ,, 70
6.—BLAKELEY CRATER... ... ... ,, 82
7.—JULY 31ST, 1917 ... ... ,, 90
8.—SEPTEMBER 20TH, 1917 ... ... ,, 102
9.—NOVEMBER 30TH, 1917 ... ... ,, 108
10.—LIMERICK POST ... ... ,, 112
11.—LOOS (1915) AND BETHUNE (1918) ... ... ,, 122
12.—FESTUBERT-GIVENCHY ... ... ,, 126
13.—THE BRITISH FRONT AND THE ADVANCE ... Back of Book

APPENDICES.

I.—COMMANDING OFFICERS, SECONDS IN COMMAND, ADJUTANTS 158
II.—HONOURS AND AWARDS 159
III.—CASUALTIES 162
IV.—OFFICERS WHO WENT OUT WITH THE BATTALION ... 162
V.—LISTS OF KILLED AND DIED OF WOUNDS 163

Digitized by Google

PREFACE.

IT has been my privilege to have been connected with the 5th King's Own for a number of years, first as a junior officer in the old Volunteer days, and then, on the formation of the Territorial Force, as Commanding Officer, in which capacity I was acting when War broke out. It seems a far cry from the time when we had a short eight days' camp in the Isle of Man or near Blackpool, or even from our first Territorial Divisional Camp at Caerwys, to the battlefields of France and Flanders, and there would have been few in those days who would have ventured to predict that the day would come when it would be possible to write down as history such a record as these pages reveal.

Whatever doubts there were as to the willingness of the Territorial Force to undertake anything which might be asked of them were speedily dispelled on the outbreak of War, and the fact that two days after the declaration of War the Battalion, practically unanimously, volunteered for overseas service is one which all present and future members will regard with pride, as indeed they will also the fact that the Battalion was one of the early Territorial units to be sent on active service. That the Territorial Force was so quickly fitted to take its place beside the Regular Army was due first to the spirit animating all ranks and also to the welcome extended to us by the Regular Army itself.

Of the part played by the Battalion in its five years overseas Captain Hodgkinson gives an accurate and dispassionate account. He might easily have elaborated the more striking episodes of the story, or made a freer use of adjectives in describing the many different aspects of modern war. The simple record is best and is the one which will give the future members of the Corps the best idea of what their predecessors did, and is the one which those who served with him would prefer.

Captain and Quartermaster Hodgkinson is one of the very few of the original officers who served with the Battalion from

Digitized by Google

start to finish, and it is no exaggeration to say that the comfort and well-being of the Battalion during those five long years was chiefly due to his zeal and efficiency. In writing the record of the Battalion he has placed us under still another obligation, as the work entailed in arranging and editing the mass of material has been very great. We can only thank him and say that the esteem and affection in which he is held by all ranks has, if possible, been increased.

In conclusion may I touch on rather a personal note and express my very deep sense of gratitude and obligation to the very loyal and gallant service which all ranks extended to me in the short time I was with them on active service, and which was extended to each subsequent Commanding Officer, and further to express the hope that in the years to come this record of their predecessors may act as an incentive to all future members of the Regiment.

(Signed) RICHARD CAVENDISH.

Holker Hall,

Cark-in-Cartmell,

Lancashire.

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION.

I CLAIM the indulgence of the reader to put in a personal note. The writing up of this history from the details to hand has been a labour of love, and of absorbing interest to me. No claim is made to literary merit, and to many the day to day incidents may appear monotonous repetition. But as a true and unvarnished tale of actual events, without embellishments and heroics, events which in themselves were monotonously repeated, such a result was unavoidable.

The book is not for the general reader, so if it falls into the hands of such they must make allowances. It is rather for those who took part in the events recorded, and for their relatives and friends.

I count it the privilege of my life to have served in such a Battalion and at such a time. In those strenuous days, when life was stripped of all its shams and pettinesses, when life was real and death a daily companion, the British youth stood forth in all his sturdy grandeur. From the lowliest private, all through the ranks to the Colonel himself, all played their parts with simple manliness. As one who ministered to their wants and knew them through and through, I am filled with intense admiration of their valour in the field and their knightliness in dealing with the civilians around them. The incident of the two stretcher bearers who went into voluntary captivity at Limerick Post is an epic in itself.

Therefore I count it a privilege to have served them all through the War except for one short break. It was only possible owing to their consideration in often relieving me of outside duties during bad weather.

Lieutenant-Colonel Hoare must have felt the same admiration when he wrote the words in the frontispiece. These were printed in colours on a card and given to each officer, N.C.O. and man on demobilisation. Any officer, N.C.O. or man who served in the Battalion overseas previous to the Armistice is entitled to one of these souvenir cards, the remainder of which

Digitized by Google

are at present in my possession, and may be obtained on application to me.

I cannot refrain from mentioning, at great risk, the names of those who have helped in compiling the history—Lieutenant-Colonel Lord Richard Cavendish, C.B., C.M.G., and Major Bates (the Second Battle of Ypres), Captain H. B. Bennett, M.C., an officer who took part in most of the big events after Loos, and to whom I am indebted for many descriptive accounts and sketch maps, Lieutenant-Colonel A. B. Wayte, D.S.O. (July 31st, 1917), Major W. M. Phillips (April 9th, 1918), Lieutenant F. B. Ellwood, M.C., R.A.M.C. (July 31st, 1917, and September 20th, 1917), and Captain W. Harris, M.C. (the Somme, 1916).

Also I am greatly indebted to Major G. C. Milnes, M.C., and Captain H. Bell, M.C., for their helpful suggestions.

In conclusion I commend the book, with all its omissions, curtailments and imperfections, to my friends in the Battalion, and to friends of the Battalion, as a memento of the great doings in which they played their part, and as an inspiration to those who take up the trust.

Any profits from the sale of the book will be devoted to the King's Own Compassionate or Memorial Fund.

(Signed) A. HODGKINSON.

Morecambe,

September, 1920.

Digitized by Google

Chapter I.

THE BATTALION IN ENGLAND.

August, 1914, to February, 1915.

THE Shadow of War was rapidly approaching as the advance party left Lancaster to fix camp at Kirkby Lonsdale on Thursday, July 30th, for the annual training. As the camp was being fixed, various items of necessary stores were called back to the Ordnance Depot, and when the Battalion arrived on Sunday, August 2nd, during heavy rain, they found a sodden camp and had to manage with one blanket, no ground sheet, and a shortage of cooking utensils. However, these trifles were forgotten in the greater events. Towards evening of that Sunday a warning came that the training would probably be abandoned, and before midnight orders were received for the Battalion to return to Lancaster and the other centres, and there await orders. On Tuesday, August 4th, orders came to mobilise next morning and proceed to Barrow.

The Quartermaster left early on the 5th to arrange billets in Barrow. These were found in two large schools, and by the afternoon, the Battalion, rapidly gaining in strength as old members rejoined, was settled in. The chief duty of the Battalion was to guard the warships in the docks and to patrol all roads leading into Barrow. Fresh drafts arrived by almost every train, and in a few days the Battalion was at full strength. Those early days were full of " alarms and excursions," and all-night " stand to's " were common. Relief came as arranged, and on August 12th the Battalion returned to Lancaster to await further orders. This time the whole Battalion, with as much civilian transport as had been hastily commandeered, was billeted in the Wagon Works, at that time empty and in a dilapidated condition. Orders came in the early hours of the 14th to secure three days' supply of rations and entrain by noon for the South of England. Once on the way it became known that the destination was Didcot, and that the duty of the

Digitized by Google

Battalion would be to guard a section of the Great Western Railway from Reading to Swindon. Brigadier-General Hibbert and his staff travelled by the same train, which arrived at Didcot about 9 p.m. No billets had been arranged, and it was decided to bivouac for the night. A conference at Brigade Headquarters sat almost immediately, and about 1 a.m. on the 15th detailed orders were issued. The companies were to be entrained by 9 a.m., each company taking over a section of the line with a post at every bridge and station. Four companies moved west towards Swindon, and three east towards Reading, with "D" Company on the Didcot section. The delivery of rations at such short notice was the hardest problem, but with the help of a motor train placed entirely at the disposal of the Battalion, rations were delivered at every post along the 53 miles of line before night. The Colonel, Lord Richard Cavendish, travelled by the motor train and so was enabled to inspect the disposition of the posts. Brigade Headquarters and Battalion Headquarters were established at Didcot, along with the transport and stores, though each company was allotted one cart to assist in distributing its rations. After a few days the use of the motor train was disallowed, and the local passenger trains were utilised instead. The accommodation at many of the bridges was very bad, and the men were living under active service conditions very little better than they later experienced in France. In addition the patrolling of the line was often dangerous, and casualties, sometimes fatal, occurred at intervals. On Sunday the 16th, the Brigadier toured the line by the motor train, and he thoroughly approved of the rationing system. Although so hurriedly organised in the early morning of the 15th it was found to work well all through the stay at Didcot.

Early in September a draft of 200 men arrived from Lancaster. This was the result of an appeal personally made by the second in command, Major Bates, and this fine body of men was recruited amidst the greatest enthusiasm in a few days. The arrival of this draft brought the Battalion strength to over 1,200, and so enabled a weeding out of those not medically fit for service abroad. It should have been mentioned that the whole Battalion volunteered for foreign service two days after mobilisation. This draft was retained at Didcot under canvas to undergo training, as the men had not previously served in the Territorials. Within a few weeks their progress was remarkable, for they

Digitized by Google

were strongly imbued with the patriotic spirit, and entered into their training with zest. The companies along the line also managed at intervals to get some training, and by the time the Battalion left Didcot on November 11th and 12th, for Sevenoaks, it was such that any officer would have reason to be proud of commanding.

At Sevenoaks, the billets were generally good, some of the men being billeted on the inhabitants, and some occupying large empty houses. The guarding of the railways had been taken over by the National Reserve, and this enabled the West Lancashire Division to concentrate at Sevenoaks and Tonbridge. While forming part of the London defences, serious training was carried out, particularly in trench work.

Christmas was spent most happily, the inhabitants throwing themselves most heartily into the effort to give the men a good time. At the end of January orders were received for the Battalion to be made ready for foreign service, though no destination was given. The mobilisation equipment was received, Army transport replaced the civilian wagons so far in use, and the men received the new web equipment and the Mark VII. foreign service ammunition instead of the Mark VI. All the men had previously passed their musketry tests at Sittingbourne and Shoreham, and they had also been inoculated. Then on Sunday, February 14th, in the early hours of a very wet morning, the Battalion entrained.

Digitized by Google

Chapter II.

EARLY DAYS IN FRANCE.

February to April, 1915.

ON Sunday, February 14th, 1915, the Battalion left Sevenoaks for an unknown destination. Before long however it was known officially that we were to embark at Southampton for Havre. The send-off from Sevenoaks was somewhat doleful, the cold wet dreary morning not tending towards cheerfulness.

A short halt at Southampton, and the Battalion embarked in the afternoon on two transports, the major portion along with the regimental transport going on the " Manchester Importer," and the rest, under Major Cadman, on the " Oxonian." Havre was reached about 10 a.m. on Monday, but the Battalion did not leave the docks till 2.30 p.m., marching through cheering crowds to Sanvic on the hill overlooking the town. Here tents were occupied and the Battalion got its first taste of real discomfort, for it was bitterly cold and wet till the entrainment at Havre Station in the early hours of Wednesday, the 17th. The intervening time had been spent in completing equipment.

The strength on arrival in France was as follows :—

Officers	31
N.C.O.'s and men	1,026
Horses and mules	72
G.S. wagons	6
Limbered wagons	13
Maltese Carts	2
Water Carts	2

Captain Fawcett and two platoons of " A " Company were left behind at Sanvic Camp to clear up and form reinforcements. Here also Monsieur Pierre Lemunier joined as interpreter.

The Battalion received a shock on arrival at the station after a march through heavy rain, for it was found that all except the officers had to ride in cattle trucks, the " Hommes 40—Chevaux

Digitized by Google

8" which became so familiar later. After much "grousing" and a liberal supply of straw, all were entrained, and the long tedious journey towards the front commenced. Later experience showed both officers and men how to provide for such journeys, but no provision was made for this, and so the time was spent between sleeping and eating eternal bully and biscuit till to many the bully became nauseous, for it was on Thursday morning, after 26 hours in the train, that the Battalion arrived at Cassel and marched past the headquarters of General Foch to Winnizeele, a name which has pleasant recollections for all the survivors of those days, for the people were genuinely glad to see us and sorry at our departure. Friendships formed in those few days lasted all through the war, and there were always pleasant welcomes in future hastily snatched visits.

At Winnizeele it was first discovered what our real destination was, and to which formation we were to be attached. The officers of the Regular Army who visited us were most helpful and did all in their power to initiate us into our new and strange life, but the perfect organisation, such as existed later, was only in its very early stages, and the few short weeks of winter left to us made us heartily thankful we had not had to go through the whole of it. Rapid initiation into very elementary trench warfare took up the few days spent at Winnizeele, the only excitement being a fire at " D " Company's farm and the illegal slaughter of a bull by the Quartermaster; and on March 2nd the whole Battalion embussed for Bailleul, Transport going separately by road. Whilst at Winnizeele Captain Fawcett and his party rejoined from Rouen. Bailleul in those days had been untouched by bomb or shell and was a flourishing country town. Here began our first taste of trench warfare, and here also we welcomed into the town our 2nd Battalion, who had marched from Ypres after a particularly trying time in the trenches. We were attached to the 14th Brigade of the 5th Division for instruction.

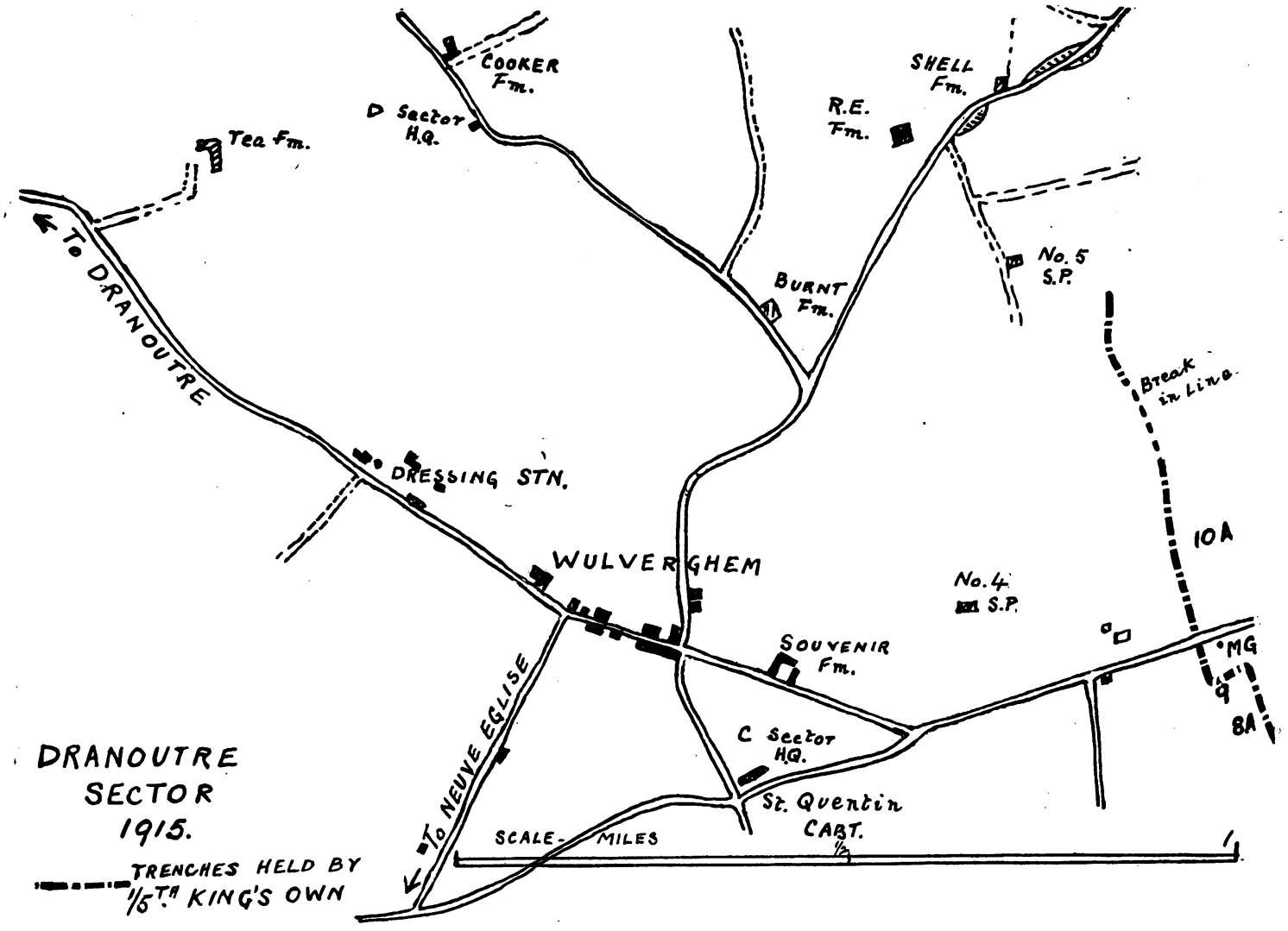
The Battalion was billeted in a large school in the Rue d'Ypres and also in the Asylum, and from there batches of officers and men went up to the trenches in front of Neuve Eglise for 24-hour tours. On March 4th the Colonel, the Adjutant and 10 N.C.O.'s and men went by bus as far as Neuve Eglise and marched the remainder of the journey. Next day another bus load went, and on March 6th the whole of " A " Company went

Digitized by Google

to Wulverghem, in front of the Messines Ridge, for 24 hours' instruction. On the 7th "B" Company went to Neuve Eglise, and "C" Company left for Wulverghem. On the same day the remainder of the Battalion in billets, *i.e.*, "D" Company, Headquarters, Transport and Stores went to new billets outside Bailleul in S. Jan Cappel. The Battalion suffered its first casualty this day, Private J. Liver of "A" Company being wounded, but on the following day, the 8th, Private W. Walls of "C" Company was killed in front of Neuve Eglise, and Corporal Gudgeon of "A" Company was wounded at Wulverghem. On the same day "D" Company left for Wulverghem, and "A" Company reached S. Jan Cappel, having marched 24 miles from the trenches on a wet and cold day. Next day "C" Company also returned, and "A" Company had its first lesson in bombing, which was quite in its initial stages, the bombs being improvised on the battlefield. On the 10th Headquarters, "A" and "C" Companies left for billets in Dranoutre, where they were joined by "D" and "B" Companies on the 11th after their 24 hours in the trenches, and Transport also arrived at S. Jan Cappel. In the afternoon "A" Company left billets to join the 2nd Battalion King's Own in the trenches at Wulverghem, and "C" Company joined the K.O.Y.L.I. at the same place. Two more fatalities occurred here, Private A. Mogg. "C" Company, being killed on the 12th, and Private H. Rourke, "C" Company, on the 13th. On this day "B" and "D" Companies relieved "A" and "C," and on Sunday, the 14th, the two latter Companies, with Headquarters and Transport, returned to S. Jan Cappel. "B" and "D" Companies were to return that night, but at a late hour the order was cancelled and their rations had to be sent up. On the 15th "B" and "D" Companies were still in trench called 10A, and on the 17th Headquarters, "A" and "C" Companies and Transport returned to Dranoutre. "D" Company went in reserve to Burnt Farm, while "A" and "C" Companies went up to relieve "B," "A" being in the firing line and "C" in support. "B" Company then returned to Dranoutre, and about this time Battalion Headquarters moved forward to be more in touch with the front line companies. Battalion Headquarters was posted at St. Quentin Cabaret, rations and trench stores being delivered near by at Souvenir Farm.

From the very beginning rations were sent up on the system

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

adopted by the 2nd Battalion King's Own, viz., in sandbags, each sandbag containing the complete day's rations of six men. These bags tied in pairs were slung over the backs of the pack animals or placed in limbers, as occasion demanded. On arrival at the ration dump a party would be waiting, some men being told off for rations and fuel, and others for trench stores. These trench stores in 1915 were requisitioned direct by battalions through brigades. The Brigade Staff Captain would receive the list of requirements, and inform the Quartermaster what his Battalion required that night, at the same time informing him where the stores were drawn. On receiving the list the Quartermaster would consult the Transport Officer as to the wagons required. The 5th King's Own being gluttons for work would generally require at least two G.S. wagons, and these tacked on to the ration limbers and pack animals made quite an imposing convoy every night. Sometimes the will to do exceeded the powers of the men, and carrying parties were not always sufficient. On such occasions the stores had to be brought back, as in those days the location of ration dumps was often altered to keep the enemy in ignorance, and no trench stores were left exposed. Later these stores were taken over by the Royal Engineers, who formed dumps behind the lines, with the result that many casualties occurred owing to the enemy shelling. But this was unavoidable if the haphazard trench improvements of 1915 were to be made more systematic. For after the storms of the previous winter the trenches were in a deplorable condition, "duckboards" were at a minimum, and the sides were constantly falling in owing to the lack of, or bad, revetting.

At this time the Battalion was transferred to the 83rd Brigade (under Brigadier Boyle), 28th Division (under Major-General Bulfin). Other units in the brigade were :—2nd Battalion The King's Own, 1st Battalion York. and Lancs., 1st Battalion K.O.Y.L.I., 2nd Battalion East Yorks., 3rd (Territorial) Battalion Monmouthshire Regiment.

On the 18th the position was unchanged, and on the 19th "B" Company relieved "D" Company in Burnt Farm. On the 20th, 100 men of "B" Company went forward, the rest remaining at Burnt Farm. On Sunday the 21st "C" Company vacated one-third of 10A, while "B" Company were in 8 and 9, "A" Company in reserve, and "D" and Transport in Dranoutre, but later in the day these two latter moved to billets in Neuve Eglise. No further changes took place till the 23rd, when

Digitized by Google

the Battalion was relieved by the 3rd Monmouths of the same brigade. " D " Company and Transport left earlier in the day for Ravetsburg, being hastened in their movements by one of the periodic shellings of Neuve Eglise. The Battalion did not arrive from the trenches till 3 o'clock the following morning, after a long and tiring march. Then came the much-needed rest at Ravetsburg in more or less decent billets, but cleaning up had hardly commenced when 500 men of " A," " B " and " C " Companies were sent as a working party on the 25th to the river Douve, where they dug a new switch line from Wulverghem, and did not arrive back in billets till 1.30 next morning. The 26th was another day of rest, but on the 27th at 5.30 p.m. the Battalion moved to the trenches at Wulverghem, Transport at the same time moving one and a half miles south of Neuve Eglise.

DISPOSITIONS.

" A "	Company	... 8 and 9.
" D "	,,	... 10A.
" B "	,,	... In support at Souvenir Farm.
" C "	,,	... Reserve, Watermill Farm.
H.Q....	...	... St. Quentin Cabaret.

" B " Company provided ration and trench stores fatigues, and " C " Company two platoons in support at T.10A and 9 support, and two platoons digging communication trenches.

On the 31st the Battalion was relieved by the 3rd Monmouths, and returned to Ravetsburg. One day for rest, and on April 2nd the Battalion left for Mount Kokereele near Boeschepe, where the men for the first time since leaving Winnizeele enjoyed a real rest in decent billets.

The foregoing account seems to be all of movement and is necessary to give some idea of the method of initiating a battalion new to trench warfare. Of the long marches, poor billets, execrable trenches without communication trenches and often minus " duckboards," the feet of mud, and lack of shelter, much could be said, for these were the early days of trench warfare, and in spite of incessant labour the hastily constructed trenches of the previous autumn had collapsed through the rain and frost of winter. Gum boots were in their infancy and not always desirable, trench foot was rampant, and the agony of

Digitized by Google

those long marches with aching, wet and swollen feet was indescribable. Considering the number of times the men had gone into and out of the trenches, mostly over the top, for that was preferred to the inadequate and muddy communication trenches, and considering the lack of cover while in the trenches the casualties were not heavy in view of later events, though at the time they seemed bad enough. The total casualties to the end of March were eight men killed or died of wounds, one death from spotted fever, and 18 N.C.O.'s and men wounded.

The rest at Boeschepe did a world of good, and the usual cheerfulness prevailed. The first Church Parade was held since arriving in France, no opportunities having hitherto presented themselves. On April 7th General Smith-Dorrien, commanding Second Army, held an inspection of the Brigade and spoke highly of the work done by the two Territorial battalions during the short time they had been out. On the same day the Battalion Interpreter, M. Pierre Lemunier, left for the Zonnebeke trenches, for we now knew that we were at last to go to Ypres, a place which many wanted to see, although there were few who did not dread in some measure the ordeal before them. We were to take over from the French, hence the departure of the interpreter. On Friday, April 9th, the whole Brigade marched to Ypres, arriving in billets about mid-day. Our arrival was signalled by shrapnel, but fortunately both men and animals were got under cover without casualties. The greater part of Ypres was still standing at that time, though the Cathedral and Cloth Hall and some streets on the east of the town were in ruins. Elsewhere life went on as usual, the inhabitants going to cellars during shelling, but otherwise seeming free from care. The Saturday and Sunday were spent in interior economy, and on Monday night, the 12th, the Battalion relieved the 3rd Monmouths in the Zonnebeke trenches (Polygon Wood) at the apex of the salient. Only five days were spent here, but it was a very hot time, the German front line at one point being only 10 to 15 yards away. Trench stores were clamoured for, sandbags in particular, the parapets being very unsafe. The whole line was shelled, sometimes heavily. " B " and " C " Companies occupied the front line, with " A " in support and " D " in reserve. On the 13th " C " Company were heavily shelled, and on the 14th a party of " A " Company received nine rounds rapid shrapnel, causing many casualties. On the 15th " A " Company was sent up to

Digitized by Google

strengthen "C," and "D" brought up to close support, and next night "B" were relieved by "A," and "C" by "D." On the 17th the Battalion was relieved by the 3rd Monmouths, who did not again get relief till they fell back on May 2nd to a new line then formed at Frezenberg, and there along with other battalions got a fearful cutting up. However, on this day, the 17th, little of this was in the men's minds, all being only too thankful to get back to billets (Lunatic Asylum) in Ypres.

Of Polygon Wood, the Colonel, Lord Richard Cavendish, writes in his diary:—*

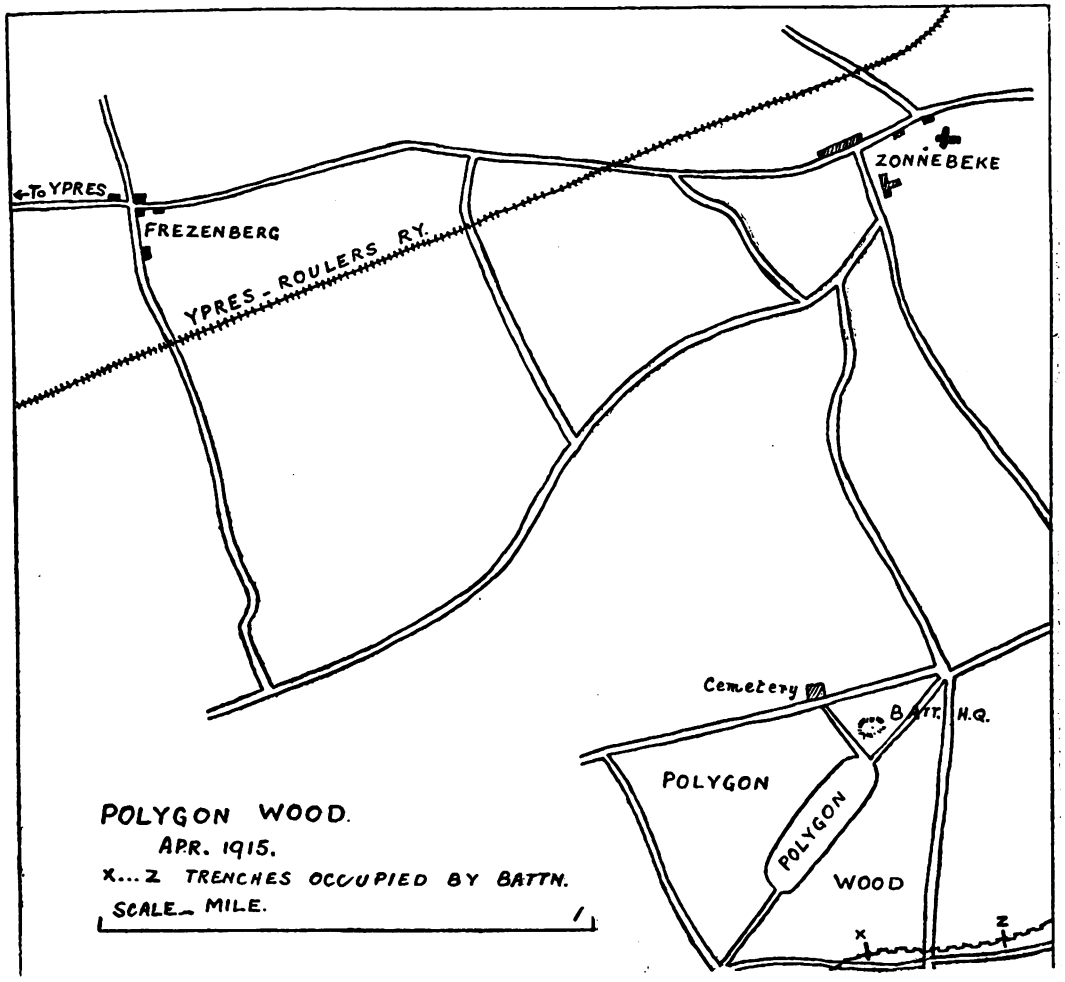
"April 12th.—We relieved the 3rd Monmouths, who had taken over from the French four days before. It was very interesting seeing French trenches for the first time. They are different from ours—the traverses badly built, badly drained, and in many places the parapet not nearly thick enough. The Germans are active opposite. The lines are about 200 yards apart at their widest, and gradually converge until they almost touch.

"15th.—Our trenches were shelled again this morning, and we had four more men wounded. This makes seven killed and 39 wounded since Monday night. It is now mid-day Thursday. That is a very heavy casualty list for purely defensive trench work. We have enormously improved the trenches, but are greatly handicapped for want of sandbags. We asked for 3,000 last night and got 650. I was pleased with the way the men worked. The shortage of ammunition is a great difficulty.

"17th.—Relieved by 3rd Monmouths. Returned to billets —Lunatic Asylum, Ypres. Our total casualties for the four days were 14 killed or died of wounds and 44 wounded. Three men's nerves went and George (Medical Officer) fears that two may be permanently mad. The men are very cheerful, and keep themselves clean under the most unfavourable circumstances. Lord Derby wrote to me on some official business, and put the following footnote in: 'Many hearty congratulations on the way you and your Battalion are doing. I have seen several letters, and in each it has been very much praised.'"

* I am asked by the Colonel to state that the Diary from which this and following extracts are taken was written not with the idea of forming a connected narrative, but was merely his own observations and impressions written down at odd moments, much of what actually occurred being omitted and much, with subsequent knowledge, requiring revision. The only alteration from the original is the insertion of names and places.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Chapter III.

THE SECOND BATTLE OF YPRES.

April—May, 1915.

YPRES was a very uneasy town for the next few days; days of heavy shelling by shrapnel and 17in. shells were followed by a day of deadly stillness. Few men were to be met in the streets, and those only on urgent business. Every large shell took its toll, mostly of civilians, who still clung to their homes even after most of the soldiers had gone to bivouac in the fields.

Regarding this the Colonel writes in his diary :—

" We have been much complimented on the cleanliness of our billets. The R.A.M.C. Colonel told George that if all the units kept their billets as well as ours he would go home on a long holiday. On the night of the 20th we were ordered to go into the fields outside the town and dig what shelters we could in the banks and hedgerows. We could not do much as our picks and spades were in our trenches at Polygon Wood."

Early on the morning of the 21st the Battalion moved to a field near St. Jean, and Transport was also ordered out. The same night the Battalion moved nearer St. Jean, and at mid-day on the 22nd orders were received for all stores to be out of Ypres by 6 p.m. Still nothing unusual had happened. If anything the shelling had decreased and nothing untoward occurred until our last load was leaving Ypres. Then a perfect torrent of shellfire broke out on every road leading into and through Ypres. The Battalion was by now dug in north of St. Jean, where they caught some of the shelling. Further back and more from the St. Julien direction, streams of fugitives, panic stricken civilians and green-faced gasping Zouaves, told of some strange thing having happened. Rations or reinforcements could not be got up the road for hours, blocked as it was by the shelling and with the stream of maddened animals, women and men all flowing in one direction. The Battalion stood by all night waiting for orders, and further back those at the Transport also stood by without orders or news of any kind, and only waiting

Digitized by Google

for daylight to try once more to move up the almost impassable road.

Extract from the Colonel's diary :—

" April 22nd.—All the troops in the immediate neighbourhood, 7 battalions in all, were put under the command of Colonel Geddes of the West Kent Regiment. He told me that something had happened, he did not quite know what, to the French sector next to ours, and that we were to stand by ready to move at a moment's notice. At 7 p.m. we received orders to move to a field near St. Jean Village. Here we waited until 1 a.m. on the morning of the 23rd. We then realised that something serious had happened as one or two French soldiers and Zouaves came straggling back, obviously panic stricken, not wounded, but suffering terribly and quite incoherent. We could make nothing out of them and could do nothing for them. (These were some of the very few survivors of the first German gas attack). We afterwards learned that the Germans had broken through a considerable section of the line held by the French Territorials and Zouaves, who had been overwhelmed by gas. The section of the line broken through was from St. Julien to north of Pilkem. At 1 p.m. we were sent forward about a mile in the direction of Pilkem and dug ourselves in."

Next day, Friday, April 23rd, the Battalion was still north of St. Jean, and in the afternoon received the following order :—

" To :—5/K.O.R. Lancasters.

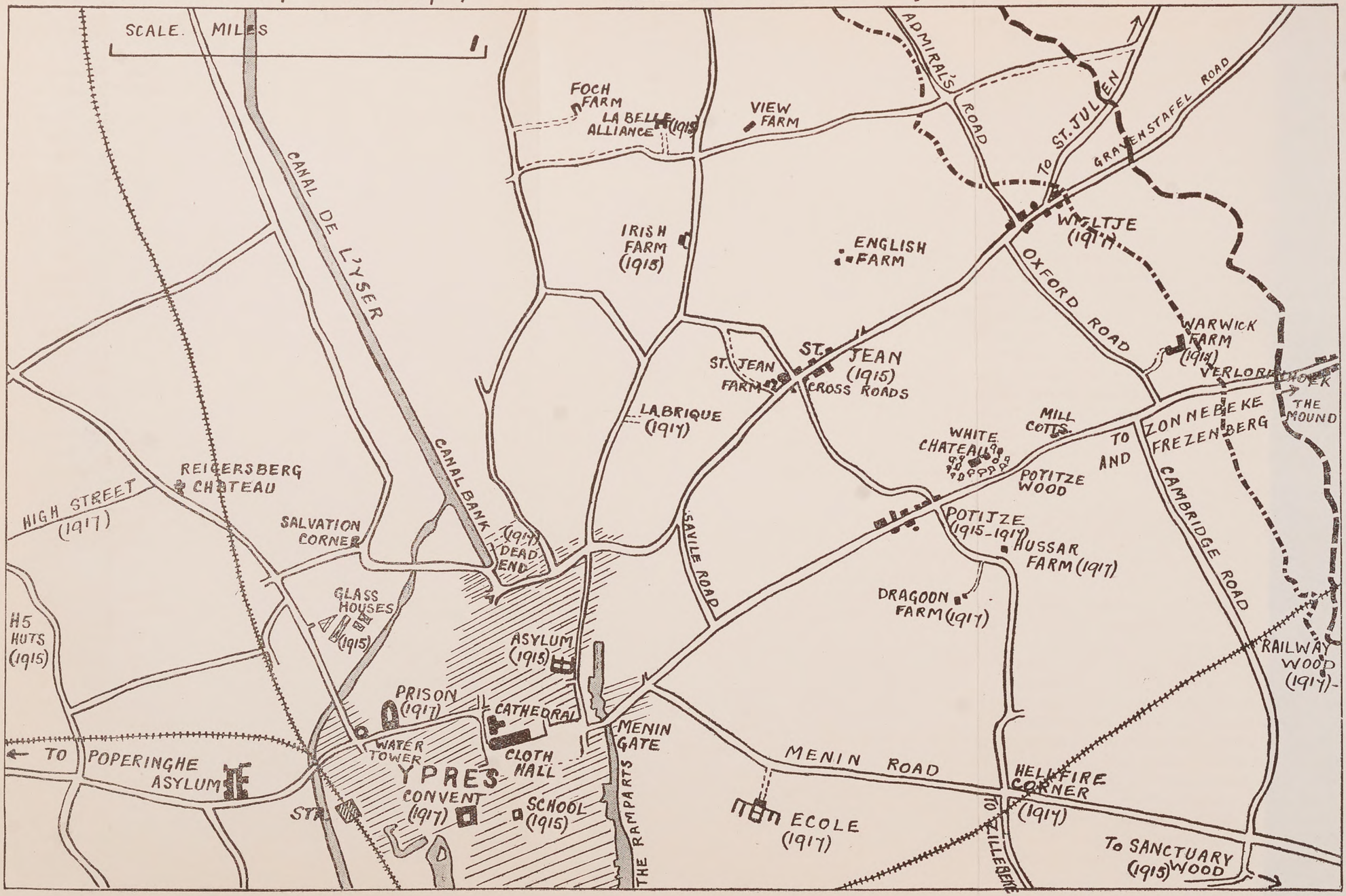
" G.K.37. Date 23.

" Following has been sent to East Yorks. and York. and Lancs. Begins. The 13th Brigade crosses by the pontoon bridge at 3 p.m. and advances to the attack at 3.45 p.m. with its right on the Pilkem-Ypres road. First objective Pilkem. O.C. East Yorks. will send an officer at once to report to General O'Gowan at Pontoon Bridge C.19c. East Yorks. and York. and Lancs. will co-operate in this attack east of Pilkem Ypres road, East Yorks. with left on that road and maintaining touch with 13th Brigade. York. and Lancs. will move on the right of the East Yorks. Two battalions of the 27th Division will co-operate in this attack on the right of the York. and Lancs. Buffs and 3rd Middlesex will hold their present line. 5th King's Own Royal Lancs. less one company will follow the attack in reserve moving with its left on the Pilkem-Ypres road. Each battalion will

Digitized by Google

YPRES. 1915 AND 1917.

BRITISH TRENCHES
GERMAN Dº
} BETWEEN JUNE 1915 AND JULY 31ST 1914.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

move on a front of 500 yards. H.Q. will remain for the present at Wieltje, where reports should be sent. Ends.

"COLONEL GEDDES. 3.35 p.m."

Major Bates' account :—

"At 5 p.m. the Battalion moved for attack, 'C' Company leading. As they deployed they were met by a heavy shell fire. Immediately they reached their position they came under machine-gun and rifle fire from the front and both flanks. Casualties were numerous from the very outset. The advance was carried out in perfect order, every man pressing forward to the objective. On coming in line with the troops of the attack they were held up for lack of support. A halt was made and each man selected or made for himself cover. Later it was deemed advisable to fall back 100-200 yards and dig in a new line, 'A' Company and a platoon of 'D' taking this duty, whilst the remainder of the Battalion fell back to its position prior to the commencement of the attack."

Colonel's account from his diary :—

"April 23rd.—At 4.30 p.m. we got a message that we were to act as supporting battalion to an attack which was to commence at 3.45. We were given the very vaguest outlines as to the objective and direction, but as the message was so late we had to hurry off. Three companies were to be in the attack and one in reserve. Bates led off with our 'C' Company following the East Yorks. We had apparently about a mile to go in full view of the Germans. It was brilliantly clear, so they soon had their artillery on us and we began to lose men from the very outset. No details were given us, and of course we had not the slightest knowledge of the ground or the position of the German trenches. This applied also to the regiment we were supporting. The whole thing was very badly planned or rather there was no plan at all. Our artillery was conspicuous by its absence and we had an unmerciful shelling, as indeed we had been having all day. It is, however, much more alarming than damaging. After Bates had cleared off I sent Atkinson with 'A' Company, then Sharpe with 'B' Company. He had not gone 10 yards before he was wounded in the leg. Hitch No. 1 now occurred—a large deep ditch causing delay. I sent Young (Adjutant) on to see what was the matter, and lost him for the day. The men were told to take cover, so our initial start was

Digitized by Google

all thrown out of order. I then went on with Atkinson with 'A' Company, and we had an awful time. We got under rifle fire, there was not a particle of cover, the leading regiment lost direction, and we got enfilade fire on us. I was pleased with the way our fellows went ahead, continually meeting a stream of wounded going to the rear and the ground littered with dead. Young tells me that the lot he was with all went forward well. Bates says the same about his. For 600 yards it was simply damnable, and it was a wonder anybody got through at all. There was one field with heaps of manure in rows. A lot of fellows thought that they could take shelter behind them. They are, of course, not bullet-proof, and there was hardly a heap without a dead or wounded man beside it. The opium tabloids came in very handy. I gave a lot to the poor fellows. At last we got to a ditch which had been improved by the Canadians. We then found out for the first time that they had attacked in the morning and after great losses had entrenched. We ought I suppose to have gone straight ahead, but by this time the East Yorks. had ceased to exist. We were just a jumble of men of about 15 regiments with hardly any officers. The Canadians said they had instructions to remain where they were, and as nobody knew which part of the line we were supposed to attack, I decided to remain where we were until dusk. If we had gone on not one of us would ever have come back. Apparently there was to have been a simultaneous attack by the 43rd Brigade on our left, which, however, like the artillery preparation, did not come off. We (Atkinson and I) remained with the Canadians. When it got fairly dark I got together as many of our fellows as possible and arranged a sort of line for them to entrench themselves in. Much to my relief Bates turned up unhurt, but his clothes were torn by a bullet. He and I then went off to Brigade Headquarters in a village about two miles away (Wieltje). After great difficulty we found them in a cellar. We explained where we were and the Colonel (Geddes) decided we were to remain there. So off we went back, and much to my joy found Young, whom I had not seen since the beginning, quite sound. We are well dug in, but I hope we are going to be relieved. Poor Carter is killed, Kirk and Coupland seriously wounded and about 200 men killed, missing and wounded."

On this day, Friday, Transport and Stores moved from the

Digitized by Google

glass houses outside Ypres, the first line to huts in H.5, and the second line to a field between Vlamertinghe and Poperinghe. The total casualties for the day were :—

Officers.—Capt. W. A. R. Carter, killed.
Lieut. H. Coupland, wounded, died of wounds 24th.
Lieut. G. Kirk, wounded, died of wounds 24th
Lieut. E. Lloyd Evans, wounded.
Lieut. T. C. Owtram, wounded.
Capt. C. V. M. Simpson, wounded.
Lieut. F. Huntington, gassed.

N.C.O.'s and Men.—Killed or died of wounds, 23.
Wounded, 99.

It should be remarked that only three battalions of our Brigade were engaged so far in this battle, the 2nd King's Own, the K.O.Y.L.I.'s and the Monmouths being still in the line on the right of the point attacked.

The 24th was devoid of incidents except heavy shelling, which, however, did little damage. The 25th was also quiet, though during the time the ration party was up at mid-day St. Jean was heavily shelled, but transport got away without casualties.

Colonel's diary April 25th to May 7th :—

" April 25th.—We are quite cut off from the outer world. After our attack last Friday, which ended in such a dismal fashion, our one and a half advance companies dug themselves in as far as I can judge about 500 yards from the German lines; the remainder came back to their original line, which we strengthened, and we remained there all day. Luckily it was a fine bright sun, but a cold wind. We were very heavily shelled for about three hours in the afternoon, they had our range to a nicety. The shells plopped about us two or three a minute. They did not do much damage, one man badly and five others slightly wounded. It was, however, very trying, and many of the men are showing signs of nerves. Of course they are dead beat; practically they have had no sleep for the last eighty hours. A lot of French have turned up, but the Canadians have gone. All day we have been very anxious, as our line was very very thinly held, and if the Germans had come along I should think that they could easily have got through. We had a worrying night, as we could not get into communication with anybody.

Digitized by Google

The only message we got from our Brigade all day was that they had been shelled out of their quarters, and had retreated to St. Jean.

"April 25th.—About 2.30 this morning we got a message that at 4.30 there was to be a big attack on the German position on our right, and that we were to be ready to go up in support, which we are now doing—9 a.m. The whole of our attack on Friday seems to have been badly managed. It was composed of six battalions hurriedly taken from their rest stations, put under the senior Colonel, who had no staff except his Adjutant, no telephone, no signallers. None of the battalions had the slightest idea what they were going to do, none of them had ever been near the place before, and not a single officer had the slightest idea of the proper direction. The attack changed direction twice and finally fizzled out and stopped as I have said in a ditch about five or six hundred yards from the German position. Of course it may have had the effect of preventing the Germans attacking us. The attack on our right seems to be progressing favourably. It was preceded by a tremendous artillery bombardment, which was quite lacking when we attacked. We evidently have brought up a lot more heavy guns. They make all the difference, as the Germans have not been able to fire on our infantry at all.

" It was a terrible experience going over the battlefield last night—dead men, rifles, packs, equipment, lying in all directions. We have not been able to bury many of them as our spades have been left far away in our trenches. I am glad to say that a good many of our missing have turned up. The men are wonderfully good at the way they go on.

" April 26th.—Potijze Wood. Late yesterday evening we got orders that we were to be relieved, much to our joy, as we had had quite enough of that place. The relief, in the shape of the King's Own Scottish Borderers, turned up about 2 a.m., and we marched to this place, which judging from its foulness must have had troops in it from the commencement of the war. We are now forming part of a new brigade under Colonel Newcombe of the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry, and are acting as a reserve to be used whenever necessary. We had not been here more than six hours before we got orders to stand to. This place has not been shelled yet by the Germans, so we are quite at ease. We came through a village (St. Jean) early

Digitized by Google

this morning. It was an awful sight, every house knocked to pieces, horses, ambulance wagons littering the street. . . . The men are very cheerful, the only thing we think about is whether we are going to get enough to eat. Sleeping and washing are luxuries which one hardly expects, and which one can do without to a surprising extent. I have not had two hours' consecutive sleep for the last five days, and none at all for the last 36 hours, but feel quite well, only a slight headache from the incessant noise. It is a lovely day here, leaves just coming out, birds singing, but these infernal guns are going off all the time. We are a funny, dirty, unshaved crowd. I am getting quite a long beard. I hear Kirk, who was wounded, has since died. Our total casualties the other day were 240. It is a mercy they were not more. There is no doubt that it was a very critical situation, and my feeling is that the Germans are a long way off from being beaten. Of course it may be a last effort on their part.

"April 27th.—We are still in our wood doing nothing. We have to be ready to start off at a moment's notice, so we cannot move away, not that one wants to, as there is a lot of shelling going on. Both sides kept up a continuous bombardment yesterday. We had four men hit. Young Coupland has died of wounds. I am extremely sorry, for he was one of the best of the juniors. I believe that the situation is considered favourable, but it is impossible to get any authentic news of even what is going on quite close.

"April 28th.—Fields outside Potijze. We have now been moved out of our wood, and scattered along the hedgerows a few hundred yards nearer where the attack is going on. We had a dull time, and have been under shell fire most of the time. We are part of a supporting brigade. As far as I can gather the attack yesterday was not successful. There was a constant stream of wounded men passing through to the dressing station, a great many Indians amongst them. They are too pathetic, many come to ask for something, and cannot make themselves understood. The position, as far as I can make out, is as follows:—This day last week the French Turcos gave way. The Germans advanced and entrenched themselves some way in front, namely on our side of the former French trenches. On Thursday we tried to drive them out, but could not get to within five or six hundred yards of their position. There have since been two efforts to drive them out, both unsuccessful.

Digitized by Google

" Our losses have been enormous. One hears of regiments being reduced to 150 men. In the meantime large bodies of troops have been concentrated in rear, of which we form part. The Germans know this, and keep up heavy shell fire all day and night. Considering the amount of fire the losses are not great, but not a day passes without a few men being hit.

" We were very unlucky yesterday evening. We were just taking up our position when one of their large shells exploded bang in the middle of a platoon of ' B ' Company, killing eight, two of whom were blown to atoms, and wounding two more.

" April 29th.—Huts near Vlamertinghe. I got a message that the Brigadier wanted to see me about 8.30. I went, fully expecting that we were to take up a more advanced position, as the French were supposed to be making an attack on our left, and if they made any progress we were to advance also. Much to my relief, which I had the greatest trouble in concealing, we were told to go back to the huts the other side of Ypres, the French not having attempted to advance. I do not think I ever had more welcome news. The men would have gone on quite cheerfully if it had been necessary, but they had had a pretty rotten time, being under continuous shell fire for so long. . . . The big shell which burst in the middle of ' B ' Company was much worse than we thought, and we found five other bodies, making thirteen in all. They were blown over the hedge. Our effective trench strength has now been reduced to 540. There are 100 transport and details who do not go into the trenches. We have therefore lost 380 out of 1,020 we started from England with.

" The General (Plumer) came round this morning, and told Bates that our attack the other day was necessary, and that although it was unsuccessful it prevented the Germans making any further advance.

" April 30th.—Another 24 hours of quiet and rest has had a wonderful effect on myself and men. Glorious hot summer day, and we are all thoroughly enjoying it. I have just been round the lines, and am very pleased with the appearance, health and spirit of the men. They are all as cheerful as can be, and their lines are cleaner than I have ever seen them, and they would be ready to go on at once. They played football yesterday with great keenness.

" May 1st.—We had a football match (Rugby) against the

Digitized by Google

East Yorks. and York. and Lancs. yesterday evening, and beat them 21 points to nothing, so our unbeaten record remains unbroken.

" May 2nd.—We are still in our huts, and are having a quiet time. There are two main roads about 200 yards on either side of us, and the Germans shell them pretty regularly, but so far none have come very close to us. We had another football match against the East Yorks., and beat them 9 points to 8. It was a curious sight, the play going on with shells bursting on the road 200 yards away. . . . We got a message from the Brigade last night, from which it appears that we shall go back to our trenches in the Polygon Wood on Tuesday. I am quite looking forward to the change. I hear that they have been very quiet down there all this time. They are at the top end of the Ypres salient, and therefore a very unlikely place for the Germans to try and break through and a still more unlikely place for us to attack them.

" Trenches, Frezenberg, May 3rd.—At 5.30 p.m. yesterday got orders to go to trenches as soon as possible. We had to go a long way round to avoid going through Ypres, or near it, as it was being heavily shelled. The whole country was being heavily shelled, so it did not seem to matter which way we went. We had two men hit on the way.

" We are not in the same trenches, but in a second line, about two miles behind, close to the Ypres-Zonnebeke road. They are quite new, very narrow and only half finished; communication trenches very bad. I do not know why we are here. It looks uncommonly like a general retirement. I don't like this spot at all. It is now 11 a.m. and we have been continually shelled for five hours, but are quite safe in our dug-outs. We have just sent one company to support the Rifle Brigade on our left, so it looks as if the fighting was still going on. 3 o'clock. Eaves' company going to support the Rifle Brigade have had a lot of casualties, two killed and seven wounded, and I believe more. They got half way, and sent back to say they were held up. We asked the Brigade what they were to do, and the reply came they were to push on. I am afraid there will be many more casualties.

" May 4th.—As I expected, the line of trenches which we occupy has now become the firing line, in other words we have abandoned about three miles of the advanced Ypres salient. I

Digitized by Google

should think from the strategical point of view it is a good move, although it brings Ypres itself very close to the Germans. Had a very worrying day, first of all Eaves' Company to support the Rifle Brigade. Then Sharpe's Company had orders to go up. They were pretty well fed up before they started. Both companies got back, I am glad to say, without many more casualties. When it was dusk I went over to see the Brigadier (we had now gone back to our proper Brigade). The first time I had seen him for three weeks. He congratulated me and the Battalion on our attack and behaviour. I really went to see him to explain that the Battalion was very weak to hold these trenches and were, besides, rather exhausted. He said that he had no spare troops at all. Went round the trenches at night. They are not nearly finished and are very wet.

"May 5th.—We had rather a damnable day yesterday, being shelled continuously for about 16 hours. Our trenches were blown to bits and we had many casualties. The position is absolutely untenable. I went round the trenches at night, it was then quiet. The men were very good, although many of them were very much shaken. It was the longest day, I think, that I have ever spent. To-day there has been shelling ever since daylight, and I believe our casualties are very severe. The 3rd Monmouths were sent to support us. I sent one platoon up the communication trench, but they got enfiladed and had to return. They were seen by the German artillery, who gave us a fearful bombardment. Our artillery has been very bad, hardly done anything at all. I do not believe that we have nearly sufficient, and there is still a great shortage of ammunition. Eight officers turned up from the Reserve Battalion.

"May 6th.—Vlamertinghe. At 6 o'clock we got the welcome news that we were to be relieved by our 2nd Battalion during the night. I have never been so thankful, as another day of that awful shelling would have driven us all mad, as it is we have a great many cases of bad nerves. The men have stuck it in an extraordinary way, and I am indeed proud of them. I do not think that they could have stood another day of it In our fire trenches yesterday it was simply hell. They were shelled with every conceivable kind of shell, 'Jack Johnson,' shrapnel, 'whizzbangs,' trench mortars, from four o'clock in the morning till dusk. Our own artillery did a little but very little. We had a battery of 4.7's, but one of the guns was defective and sent

Digitized by Google

shells in any direction except that of the enemy, the shell itself making a noise like that of a traction engine going up a steep hill. Since Sunday evening, when we went in, until 11 o'clock last night we had 36 killed, 153 wounded and 4 missing. Gardner, one of the junior officers, was killed and Saer wounded, while three, Bustard, Carr, Barrow, out of the eight officers who had arrived the night before were wounded. Their first day's fighting was rather a grim experience.

" Our 2nd Battalion turned up about 9.30, and the relief was completed by 11. Our Transport Officer, Bell, has done extremely well. He never failed to get our rations up, and has kept his men under such admirable control that we have had no trouble. All the roads are well known to the Germans, and they make a practice of shelling them when they think the transport is going along. The men, of course, cannot take refuge in the ditches or the fields like other troops, but have to remain with their horses.

" The operations of the last few days in which we took part were, I think, as follows :—We withdrew from our advanced line to a prepared position about two miles in rear. The retirement was admirably carried out, and was not discovered by the enemy. As soon as it was daylight the following morning, the Germans found out that we had retired, and advanced in large compact masses to within 800 to 1,000 yards from our position, without a single shot being fired at them by our guns. Encouraged by the fact that their advance was uncontested, they brought up every conceivable kind of gun, from Maxims to ' Black Marias,' and began and continued a point-blank fire on our trenches, which, instead of being any protection, were an absolute death trap. When we went into these trenches there were no telephones, wire entanglements, dug-outs, or any of the various devices for carrying on trench fighting, simply a narrow ditch one and a half feet in water in many places. Under their heavy gun fire they were able to advance to within easy striking distance, and had they been so disposed could easily have rushed the whole of our line. Our fellows claim to have shot a good many Germans, but you cannot fight big guns with rifles. It is this terrible lack of guns and ammunition which has caused and is causing such heavy losses.

" May 7th.—The new officers are all good and ought to be very useful. We got orders to-day to go into dug-outs to be in

Digitized by Google

reserve to-night. It is a great bore, as we could have done with a day or two extra rest. Our trench strength is now only 398. Over 100 of these came to sick parade this morning, and George tells me that there were no shirkers among them, but were all genuine cases—violent headache, bruises, shaken nerves and other complaints. I hope we shall not have anything to do, as we are really not fit for it.

"I have been selecting men for decorations. It is very difficult; there are so many who have done so well. I am extremely proud of the way the men have done. There are many cases of wonderful individual bravery. One man volunteered three times when all communication was cut off to take urgent messages. It was almost certain death, but he got through every time. Another man went out to give water to a wounded man in a place where the whole trench was level with the ground, and remained with him over half an hour until he died. The way our stretcher bearers worked was wonderful. They (about 16 of them) are all under 20 and every one of them got badly wounded. It is wonderful how a time like this brings out all the good qualities. It is quite impossible to exaggerate the unselfishness and courage of the men. They are also so cheerful under it all.

"The band of the 2nd Battalion is now playing, and is cheering us all up.

"I know absolutely nothing of what is going on, and rather strangely do not seem to care.

"As far as I can remember we moved into dug-outs in the fields just south of St. Jean as soon as it got dark on the evening of the 7th. About 1 a.m. we got orders to move to a line of trenches at right angles to the Ypres-Zonnebeke road opposite to the Chateau at Potijze. We found them already full of men from many regiments. We then learnt that the Germans were making a big attack on the trenches at Frezenberg (where we had been three days before). During the morning there was a continual stream of wounded men and stragglers coming back. About 12 Major Clough and about 40 men of the 2nd Battalion came in and told us that the Germans had attacked that morning in overwhelming strength and had taken the trenches, and that they were the only survivors of the Battalion. Soon afterwards the Colonel of the 3rd Monmouths and his headquarter staff came in and told us that their trenches on the right of the road

Digitized by Google

at Frezenberg had also been taken. About 3 o'clock our Brigade Major (Mumby) came and gave us orders to advance and try and retake our former trenches (at Frezenberg). We had about a mile and a half to go. We started in artillery formation and got badly shelled to start with. After going about half a mile we got under machine-gun and rifle fire, so I think the Germans must have advanced some distance in front of Frezenberg. When we had gone about three-quarters of a mile I was wounded and remained where I had been hit until dusk. I have therefore no personal knowledge of what happened, but I believe we were finally held up about a quarter of a mile further on."

The Colonel's diary sums up most of the incidents, but it may be added that on April 27th the Battalion was ordered to support an attack on C.15. In moving up one shell killed 12 men of " B " Company and wounded five. On May 3rd " C " Company (Captain Eaves) lost heavily in supporting the Rifle Brigade. " A," " C " and " D " Companies were shelled for 14 hours on the 4th, and at night the Transport bringing up the rations were shelled at Frezenberg, losing three horses and five drivers and storemen wounded.

The diary finishes on the 7th, as the Colonel was wounded next day, and so closed his career with the Battalion at the front. He had shown himself a fine soldier and a gallant gentleman, and his presence and courage were an inspiration to all under his command.

On May 8th, the day the Colonel was wounded, the Battalion was ordered to G.H.Q. lines to support. We lost some of " B " Company from a shell as the men fell in, and were heavily shelled in G.H.Q. lines till ordered to advance to retake lost trenches and to take on the remnants of the 2nd Battalion King's Own and the Monmouths. The advance took place under heavy shell fire and enfilade fire from machine guns on the Potijze road. A line was occupied 1,200 yards in front of G.H.Q. lines, but a bayonet charge at 8 p.m. failed to carry the advance further. Five officers in addition to the Colonel were wounded that day, and Lieutenant Stanley Bates, son of the Second-in-Command, was killed. Major Bates had previously gone to hospital sick.

The total casualties for the day were :—

Officers.		N.C.O.'s and Men.	
Killed 1.	Wounded 6.	Killed 15.	Wounded 96.

Digitized by Google

10 N.C.O.'s and men died of wounds later.

On the 9th shelling was again heavy, but at night the whole Brigade was relieved and went back to the huts in H.5 previously occupied. But now the whole Brigade could occupy one battalion camp and the remnants of the officers formed one mess, instead of six. In fact next day they were formed up into a composite battalion under Colonel Gough of the 3rd Monmouths, and went to Potijze to dig shelter trenches during the night. On the 11th they came back to G.H.Q. lines, and finally the exhausted remnants of the Brigade were relieved the same night and went to huts on the main Ypres-Poperinghe road. One hundred and fifty men from the Reserve Battalion had come up as a draft the previous day. These bivouacked in a field near the road, while the survivors of the Battalion, over 1,000 strong coming out, now slept in a hut and a very small barn.

The casualties at Ypres from April 9th to May 11th excluding sick were :—

	Officers.	N.C.O.'s and Men.
Killed or died of wounds	7	113
Wounded	14	416

The total strength of the Battalion on May 12th, including 150 draft and about 90 at Transport, was about 450, including 11 officers.

To show how much men were wanted in those critical days, one night every available man in the Transport lines was sent forward to reinforce, leaving 10 men to look after 60 animals, all stores, and take up rations at night. The Transport Sergeant for once drove a pair of animals in a limber.

Captain W. Harriss joined May 16th, 1915.

After one night in the hut at Poperinghe Road, the Battalion moved half a mile nearer Poperinghe to a farm formerly occupied by " B " Echelon of the Transport, where in a decent field they bivouacked under shelters provided, till the 14th (Captain Sharpe was then commanding the Battalion), when they moved by motor bus to Steenvoorde and marched to Ryvelt near Winnezeele. Only one event marred this short rest, "stand to" being ordered, but fortunately later was cancelled. The men were really not fit for another effort just then. Rest and reorganisation were the order of the day at Ryvelt, and five officers even went on a five-

Digitized by Google

days' leave to England. On Sunday, the 16th, one more opportunity occurred for a Church Parade, and in the afternoon the Battalion was inspected by the acting Brigadier, who had occasion to find fault, for which he afterwards expressed his regret when he learned what the Battalion had been through.

As the Colonel had been wounded, Major Bates and Major Cadman gone to England sick, and the Adjutant, Captain Young, also gone to England with enteric, Captain F. Eaves, Officer Commanding " C " Company, was now in command, with Lieutenant G. C. Milnes as Adjutant.

On Friday, May 21st, the 83rd Brigade was inspected at Winnizeele by General French, who thanked the Brigade for the work done in the Second Battle of Ypres. In the afternoon the Battalion marched to bivouacs, Vlamertinghe, in a wood, which afterwards became C and O camps, where the Battalion encamped in 1917. From this bivouac a party of officers went to reconnoitre trenches in Sanctuary Wood. They remained in the trenches all night, and coming across the open in the early dawn of the 22nd Captain Bingham was killed by a sniper. He had been one of the officers to go on leave, and had only arrived back the previous day. On the evening of the 22nd the Battalion left bivouacs and took over the front line trenches in Sanctuary Wood. When the Battalion came back to the Ypres Salient in 1916 and 1917 the move from the trenches to rest billets and back was always by train, but in 1915 buses were only provided when it was found that the men were too exhausted to march. The trenches occupied were in I.24. This day the Transport First Line moved to a field near the Asylum, Ypres, on the Poperinghe Road, and the Second Line and Stores went back to the field lately occupied by the Battalion in G.4a. The Sunday in the trenches was quiet, but on Monday the 24th, the enemy attacked on the left with gas, the trenches, supports and dug-outs being heavily shelled from 2.30 a.m. to 3 p.m. The casualties however were slight, and we escaped most of the gas. In those days gas precautions were very crude, the only safeguard for quite a long time being hastily improvised respirators of veiling and cotton waste. Then parcels arrived from " Sister Susie " till the avalanche was so great by the time that better methods had been found, that " Sister Susie " might be annoyed if she knew to what uses they were put.

On the 25th there was slight shelling, the K.O.Y.L.I.

Digitized by Google

relieving at night, and the Battalion going to support in G.H.Q. lines.

Heavily shelled in G.H.Q. lines on the 26th and again at night on the 27th, when "B" Company caught out badly once more, losing most of its chief N.C.O.'s by one shell. The nights were spent on repair of G.H.Q. line, the days till Wednesday, June 2nd, being fairly quiet. On this day G.H.Q. line was very violently shelled, four men being killed and four men wounded. "A" Company's storeman, Private J. Crossley, was hit passing through Ypres on the previous Saturday and died on the 2nd. Otherwise there had been remarkably few casualties amongst men going with rations, considering the amount of shelling in and around Ypres.

At night relief came and the whole Battalion, including the echelons of transport, were gathered together in huts near Ouderdom at H.19. Early next morning, worn out as they were, divisional orders were received for a parade for the King's birthday, but fortunately better counsel prevailed, and the parade was cancelled. The same day the whole Battalion marched back to Ryvelt to the previous billets, a few buses being provided for those whose feet had given out. It was a long and weary march, and much persuasion and much coercion had to be used in the later stages or the men would have slept by the roadside all night. The Battalion rested here for eleven days and rapidly regained its old sprightliness. The days were spent in cleaning up, refitting, and the training of the new draft in trenching and wiring. Musketry practice was also obtained at Mont des Rècollets near Cassel, these occasions being treated as picnics.

Draft of two officers and 54 other ranks from 2/5th on the 10th, also draft of about 70 "blowbacks" previously.

On the 11th "grenadier platoons," later called "bombing squads," were formed under Lieutenant Briggs, who during the fight at Frezenberg had been attached to the 83rd Brigade as an intelligence officer, brigades being then strictly limited in staffs. While at Ryvelt, the Medical Officer, Lieutenant W. George, who had rendered most valuable service, went to take over base hospital work, and his place was taken by Lieutenant J. Deighton, R.A.M.C., who soon became most popular and remained with the Battalion till his death on the Somme in 1916.

Digitized by Google

Chapter IV.

KEMMEL.

June—September, 1915.

THE days at Ryvelt passed all too quickly, till on Monday, 14th, the Battalion moved to huts in M.6a, sheet 28 at Zevecoton near Reninghelst, our 2nd Battalion being in the adjoining huts. On the 15th the Battalion was exercised in a practice alarm to see how long it would take to get on the move with all stores and transport. An hour was allowed, but the whole process was accomplished under the allotted time, for in 1915 transport was limited and luxuries non-existent. The 18th, Waterloo Day, was celebrated by a joint open air concert with the 2nd Battalion. These few days were unaccountably given up to rest and pleasure, but on Sunday, the 20th, the Brigade moved to bivouacs in fields near Locre, and for two days fatigue parties went to the trenches at Kemmel. Then commenced a very difficult time. The Battalion had never been made up in strength except by a few slightly wounded men returning from the base hospitals. We could not muster 400 trench strength, and therefore were unequal to the task of relieving the Regular units, who were now made up both in officers and men. The Monmouths were in like straits, and afterwards lost their identity. We escaped that fate, though the summer of 1915 was a very awkward one. It seemed as though we and the Monmouths were to be the " hewers of wood and drawers of water " to the 83rd Brigade, and both officers and men chafed at the indignity. " D " Company, much to its disgust, was attached for trench duty to the K.O.Y.L.I.'s, while the other companies found fatigues. On Thursday, the 24th, the Battalion moved to huts at La Clytte, Transport going to a field on the Locre-Reninghelst road. On the 25th Major Cadman rejoined and took command, Captain Eaves in the meantime having been given his majority, which he now

Digitized by Google

relinquished. The days were spent in more fatigues, the few officers we had being on constant duty, Lieutenant Briggs in particular being a host in himself. On the 29th "A" Company relieved "D" in H1 and H2, and the following day "C" Company was attached to the East Yorks in H5. On the same day Major Cadman inspected the transport, which he found in excellent condition after a very hard and uncomfortable four months' work.

Our first fatality since coming into this sector occurred on July 1st, Private E. Callow of "D" Company being killed. Nothing of interest happened for a time, the Battalion still being a kind of odd jobber, till Major Cadman persuaded Brigade to allow the Battalion to take over a section of trench. In order to man the section of trench every available officer and man was taken, the transport lines thinned of men, and the Transport Officer himself, Lieutenant H. Bell, was given charge of a trench, the Quartermaster taking on his transport duties. The trenches occupied on Wednesday, July 21st, were L, K3, and K2b, with Headquarters at York House and ration dump at Sandbag Villa. On the 24th officers of the New Army made their first appearance for trench instruction. There was not much shelling, and casualties were below the normal though in August they increased somewhat. The Battalion was relieved by the K.O.Y.L.I.'s on Friday, the 30th, and went to bivouacs at Scherpenberg. The next day Major Eaves went on extended leave. Our occupation of the line in such weak numbers did not apparently prove a success, for the next tour only "B" and "D" Companies went to the Kemmel trenches, H2, H3, H5, attached to the York. and Lancs. This was on August 3rd, and on the 4th the remainder of the Battalion went to billets in Locre. On the 9th there was a heavy bombardment at Hooge, and the Battalion "stood to." On the 10th "A" and "C" Companies relieved "B" and "D," and on the 11th the remainder of the Battalion and stores moved to bivouacs in M.11c 4.5, transport being at M.17c 6.5. These constant movements were then, and are still, incomprehensible. "A" and "C" and "B" and "D" Companies were alternately attached to the Regular units for trench duties, taking turns with the Monmouths, till on August 16th the officers reconnoitred new trenches in front of Kemmel. A copy of the operation order issued by the 83rd Brigade may be of interest.

Digitized by Google

" OPERATION ORDER 62 (83rd Brigade).

" 1. On the night of the 17/18 August, 1st York. and Lancs. will relieve 2nd K.O.R.L.R. in present right sector, and 5th King's Own in H.5, and their M.G. in S.P.12.

" 2. 5th King's Own will hand over M.G. in S.P.12 to 1st York. and Lancs. and leave 25 men in H.5, who will come under orders of 1st York. and Lancs.

" 3. 5th King's Own will take over from Northumberland Fusiliers (84 Brigade) the following trenches :—

" G.4	35 men
" G.4a	50 men
" New sap	65 men plus 1 M.G.
" H.1	55 men
" S.P.11	30 men plus 1 M.G.

" The garrison in H.2 and H.3 will remain as at present.

" 4. H.Q. 5th King's Own will be at Kemmel Chateau (stables).

" 5. List of trench stores taken over from the Northumberland Fusiliers will be handed in to this office. Completion of relief wired to Brigade.

" 6. 5th King's Own will pass the barrier No. 20b 6.8 at 8 p.m.

" 7. On completion of relief 83rd Brigade front will be divided into three sectors :—

" Right sector	5th King's Own
" Centre sector	1st York. and Lancs.
" Left sector	1st K.O.Y.L.I.

" Ends."

Relief was reported complete 11.50 p.m.

" *Work done to dawn the 18th* (after relief complete).—Banquette built in H.3 and parapet repaired, where damaged by ' whizzbangs.'

" Communication trenches between H.1 and H.5 improved.

" Wire, front of H trenches, improved.

" *Enemy work*.—Listening patrol report activity on enemy front. Sandbags filled and trenches improved. O.C. H.3 reports enemy mining under right flank H.3. Mining Officer from J.3 new to investigate. Enemy wire reported good.

" *Casualties at noon*.—Other ranks : wounded, one (2244 Private V. Halloway).

Digitized by Google

"*Situation* (4.30 p.m.).—Normal. Calm and showery."

The above report gives some idea of what had to be done after reaching the trenches and before dawn appeared. The Adjutant, Lieut. Milnes, had gone on leave and the ubiquitous Transport Officer was acting in his stead, leaving his beloved animals once more to the tender mercies of the Quartermaster, but he managed to get a look at some of them each night as they came up with rations.

The machine guns mentioned in operation order were our four Vickers Maxim machine guns, which replaced the two obsolete naval machine guns brought out by the Battalion, and put out of action at the 2nd Battle of Ypres the first day they opened fire. These four Vickers guns were on battalion charge, and worked as part of the Battalion till taken over by the 166th Brigade Machine Gun Company in 1916.

On August 19th a M.G. emplacement was discovered whence machine-gun was playing on "V.C." Road. Artillery was informed, and opening fire silenced the gun. On the 21st 83rd Brigade wired: "Heavy artillery will fire on Messines Tower at 5 p.m. to-day." The result was not communicated. The 3rd Monmouths took over the trenches on the 22nd, and the Battalion returned to former bivouacs made of hop poles and blankets. These latter were a concession. All blankets had been withdrawn in the early summer, but about one hundred were allowed to be retained for emergencies. These were never issued to the men when they came out of the trenches, but were used for making "bivvies." At that time the more slender hop poles were abundant, and one long pole slung along two tripods (or bipods), also made of hop poles and covered with blankets, made fairly excellent cover. At first hop poles were "out of bounds," but when it was evident that the poles appeared like magic out of nowhere, the authorities bowed to the inevitable and regularised their use by requistioning them from the inhabitants and issuing to the units. Tents were a luxury not to be lightly won and bivouac sheets had a habit of always getting wrong in the count. Houses and barns, especially the latter, were not in favour during those months owing to the "livestock," and the men always preferred the fields if they could "scrounge" some sort of cover. The men washed their own shirts, or lost or burnt them when too "lousy" and did everything possible to keep themselves clean. Baths were some-

Digitized by Google

times available, but generally it was up to the Company Commander to find tubs and worry the cooks for hot water. Often the stretcher bearers (but this was later, in 1916), after an arduous tour of the line, were set to work by the Medical Officer, to find tubs and run a proper bath house.

On August 22nd then, the men made their " bivvies " of hop poles and blankets. The following day there were baths at Westoutre.

On Tuesday, the 25th, came welcome relief for the sorely overworked officers, for it must be remembered that all these months at Kemmel there were only ten officers, including the C.O., Adjutant, Transport Officer, and Quartermaster, so that often there was only one officer in charge of a company in the front line with sometimes temporary assistance to allow him to get some sleep. There was great rejoicing, then, when on the 25th five officers joined from the 10th King's Own, and next day when five more officers joined we were indeed in clover.

On the 28th we again took over the same trenches from the Monmouths, but this tour was devoid of incident except for spasmodic shelling. The Battalion should have been relieved on Friday, September 3rd, but the 3rd Monmouths had left the Brigade, and as there was nobody to relieve us the 2nd King's Own took over our line with the help of our " B " and " D " Companies, " A " and " C " Companies coming to bivouacs with Battalion Headquarters at the old spot on the Locre-Reninghelst road. Another welcome draft arrived on September 17th in the shape of 34 N.C.O.'s and men, and we began to have hopes that somebody somewhere and somehow had heard of our existence and plight.

There was a general stir nowadays, many fatigues, much training, especially bombing and bayonet fighting, and even a visit from the Brigade Staff, Brigadier-General Ravenshaw, Major Follett, and Captain Bois, the late Staff Captain, Captain Gepp, having gone to the 84th Brigade. On Friday, the 17th, came the first indication of a real move, and there was much secrecy. " B " and " D " were at this time in the trenches, and first " D " was relieved and then " B " by the Canadians, who eventually took over the whole divisional front. On September 20th, General Ravenshaw inspected Transport, and a concert party of the 85th F.A. gave a concert.

Digitized by Google

Chapter V.

THE BATTLE OF LOOS.

September, 1915.

ON September 23rd the Battalion issued the following operation order :—

" 1. On 23rd September the 83rd Brigade will march to billets about Outtersteene via Locre-Bailleul-Outtersteene Road.

" 2. Starting point Locre church.

" 5th King's Own ... ... 9.40 a.m.

" Clearing up party ... ... 11.0 a.m.

" 3. Second Lieutenant Lloyd in charge of rearguard to march behind ambulances.

Second Lieutenant Monks and party to march in rear of first line transport.

" 4. Strict march discipline will be maintained. Corps Commander will watch Brigade march through Bailleul.

" 5. Parade 8 a.m.

" 6. Billeting party under Lieutenant Hodgkinson to be at Locre church at 8 a.m.

" 7. Every man, including transport, machine gunners, stretcher bearers and all men regimentally employed, will carry his complete equipment."

The Battalion was complimented on its appearance by Sir Charles Ferguson as it passed through Bailleul, and arrived in billets between Bailleul and Outtersteene about noon. Next day preparations were made for a sudden move by march or bus, leaving most of our baggage, scanty as it was, for it was now known that a battle was pending further south, and the 28th Division was a flying column to be put in as required. All preparations were completed by 6 p.m. on the 25th. At 3.5 a.m.

Digitized by Google

the following day orders were received to move at 5 a.m. and at that hour the Battalion left by road with complete transport. Lieutenant Lloyd Evans, who had rejoined the previous evening, took over the duties of Quartermaster, Lieutenant Hodgkinson having had to be left behind, and next day being admitted to hospital. The Battalion marched on to Robecq, a distance of 16 miles, before breakfast, and in the afternoon the march was continued towards Bethune, but eventually a return was made to billets near Robecq. Considering the early hour of starting and the long march before obtaining food, the number of men falling out was exceptionally small.

On Monday, the 27th, the Battalion moved by buses to near Vermelles, where the night was spent in an open field without cover of any kind from the pouring rain. On this day five officers who had been casualties during the Second Battle of Ypres rejoined, viz., Lieutenants Huntington, Owtram, Hinton, Seward, and Roper. By this time the battle, which had commenced on the 25th, was fairly well decided, and the 28th Division, or at least that part of it more nearly connected with us, came in to clear up the mess and to retain what had been taken. During the afternoon of the 28th the Battalion occupied reserve trenches at Noyelles, and at night 300 men were sent up as a fatigue for the 85th Brigade. The remainder of the Battalion spent another night in the rain in an open field, previously ploughed, and now, after two days' rain, most vile. The Battalion spent the 29th " standing to " in that same field from 10.30 a.m. to 6.15 p.m., when it moved to reserve trenches at Vermelles. The Battalion was still in the reserve trenches on the 30th, and the transport men and the Quartermaster's staff were being employed on fatigues. A few casualties occurred this day. On October 1st the Battalion was still in reserve till relieved by the 5th King's Liverpools, and at last the tired and rain-sodden men reached billets at Annequin at 3 a.m. on the 2nd. They were not destined to have much rest, for later in the day sudden orders were received to move to Vermelles to support the 84th Brigade. By this time Captain Eaves had rejoined the Battalion, and was ordered by Brigade to assume command of the Battalion. Early on the 3rd 350 men were detailed as bomb, ration and water fatigues, and by 4 a.m. the whole Battalion were in the second line support. At 6 a.m. the Battalion was ordered to charge. The parapet was lined when the order was

Digitized by Google

cancelled. In the evening the 83rd Brigade occupied the trenches, and the Battalion, which had been acting with the 84th so far, now retired to the reserve trenches at Vermelles. There were intermittent attacks on both sides, but the battle was virtually over. On the night of the 5th the Guards Brigade relieved us and the Battalion went to billets at Annequin, and next day to Gonnehem. Here there was a rest for a few days, and on the 13th the 83rd Brigade was inspected by the new General Officer Commanding 28th Division, Major-General Briggs.

Once more towards the line, the Battalion staying in huts at Ferme du Roi outside Bethune on the nights of the 15th and 16th. The 83rd Brigade relieved the 22nd Brigade and the Battalion and Transport moved to Le Preol, the officers going forward to reconnoitre trenches at Cuinchy. Here general training and fatigues occupied a few days, the Battalion not actually occupying the line, but going back to Gonnehem billets on the 21st. Next day a further move was made to billets on the L'Ecleme-Robecq road, information being there received that the Battalion had been transferred to the 2nd Brigade of the 1st Division in the IV. Corps.

Digitized by Google

Chapter VI.

IN THE FIRST DIVISION.

October, 1915, to January, 1916.

DURING the previous week preparations had been made for going with the 28th Division to Serbia, Transport being somewhat reorganised for that purpose, but at the last moment it was decided that the Territorial units were to stay in France, hence the transfer to the 1st Division. At the same time some of the new officers who had joined us at Locre, viz., Lieutenants Knox, Lloyd, Monks, Harrold and Bedford, were transferred to the 2nd Battalion The King's Own and so remained with the 28th Division. The Battalion then moved to the 2nd Brigade area at Ecquedecques. This was on October 22nd, and the same day some of the officers were detailed to assist at entraining the 28th Division at Lillers and Bethune. General training was now the order of the day, there being an inspection on the 27th by the G.O.C. 2nd Brigade, and next day a composite battalion of the 2nd Brigade, including 200 men from the 5th King's Own, were inspected by the King at Lillers. Divine services now took place fairly regularly, except when the men were actually in the line, but it was not till 1916 that the Battalion actually got a padre of its own. There had been several changes amongst the warrant officers. In June Regimental Sergeant-Major Snelson, who had come out with the Battalion, went to England sick, and for a short time R.S.M. M. Smith succeeded. He also went to England sick, being followed by C.Q.M.S. Byrne, who later was superseded by R.S.M. Brown, sent out from England, R.S.M. Byrne then became Regimental Quartermaster Sergeant, following R.Q.M.S. Wolfenden, who went to take over orderly duties at the base. R.Q.M.S. Wolfenden had taken over his duties from R.Q.M.S. J. Woodcock, who quite early broke down during the rough times and many changes at Dranoutre. He

Digitized by Google

was never fit to rough it, and was only brought out at his own earnest request. On November 9th R.S.M. Brown took over light railway duties, and was succeeded by C.S.M. Barrow, and from this date till January, 1917, R.S.M. Barrow and R.Q.M.S. Byrne continued at their posts, when a catastrophe occurred which will be dealt with later.

On November 10th G.O.C. 4th Corps inspected the 2nd Brigade, and on the 13th the Battalion marched to Lillers, entrained for Noeux les Mines, arriving there at 7.45 next morning. From Noeux les Mines there was a march to Mazingarbe, arriving 9 a.m. The journey was again continued in the evening, the Battalion marching through Philosophe, and relieving the 19th London Regiment in the old German line at B.2 sub-sector. On the 15th the situation was normal, but there were three casualties, including Private H. Cross killed. It should have been mentioned that the casualties during the time we were engaged in the latter portion of the Battle of Loos were very slight.

The tours of duty in the trenches at Loos were short, as the trenches were very poor, the approaches exceedingly bad, and the men's feet required constant attention. During this tour from November 14th to 17th little of note happened. The Quartermaster, Lieutenant Hodgkinson, rejoined on the 16th, and Lieutenant H. B. Bennett first joined the Battalion at the same time. Two days previously Lieutenants Titchener, Dixon and Critchley had arrived, so the Battalion was again getting stronger in officers.

On the 17th the 1st Loyal North Lancs. came in to relieve, the Battalion coming back to billets at Mazingarbe. Only two days out and then we relieved the 2nd Sussex in B.1 support trench. Here the time was spent in salvaging arms and equipment from the Loos battle, two men being killed and one wounded. On the 22nd the Battalion moved up to the front line in B.1, and came back to B.1 support two days later. The 10th Gloucesters relieved on the 26th, the Battalion going back for six days' rest to Noeux les Mines, the Transport remaining at Mazingarbe. Both these places were shelled intermittently, and neither place was comfortable in those days, though at Noeux les Mines the objective was mostly the mines, while at Mazingarbe the enemy was not partial to any part of the town. The days were spent in baths, personal cleaning up

Digitized by Google

and the cleaning of the streets, which in both towns were a sea of mud. On one occasion the orderly room staff had to beat a hasty retreat as the shells were falling uncomfortably close.

On December 2nd the Battalion relieved the 1/9th Liverpools in A.2 support in 9th and 10th Avenues, Private W. Greenwood being killed whilst going in. The Loyals were relieved on the 4th, in A.2, one company of the 1st K.R.R. being attached to strengthen the front lines, H.Q. being in Gun Alley. The weather was very wet and the trenches worse than ever. On the 8th the Battalion was relieved by the 1st K.R.R., and went for two days to Philosophe, which generally was a most unhealthy place as regards shelling, though the bathing arrangements were good. However, these two days were quiet, and on the 10th the Battalion was again in A.1 support, relieving the Loyals. "A" and "C" Companies were in Gun Alley, with a guard in North Loos Avenue, "B" Company had garrisons at 65 Metre Point and Lens Road redoubt. "D" Company were in close support to the Loyals in A.1. in the front line. H.Q. were at the northern entrance to Loos, and rations were taken there through Fort Glatz. On the 11th H.Q. was "pip-squeaked" and there was general artillery and aeroplane activity. Dense smoke was observed from the Cite St. Auguste, and the fire continued burning for days. On the 14th Gun Alley and communication trenches were heavily shelled, but our casualties were slight. At night the Battalion went back to billets at Mazingarbe, where the usual cleaning up began, though numerous large fatigue parties were required for forward work. One of the shells on Mazingarbe was rather unlucky for us, for it landed in a stable, killing four horses. Two of them were our officers' chargers, and the only survivor, Peggy, ever afterwards was very "windy" whenever she heard shells. Next day a shell fell near the store, killing two young civilians, but generally the casualties were remarkably few. On the 20th the Battalion relieved the 1/9th Liverpools in B.1 in the front line, but only two days were spent here, the Battalion going back to the Vermelles end of Philosophe. Next day the railway crossing was shelled, but no casualties. On the 24th, the Battalion was again back in the line at B.2 supports, but nothing worth recording happened here except desultory shelling, and it is worthy of record that Holy Communion was celebrated in the trenches on this day. Christmas Day was quiet and on the 28th

Digitized by Google

the 1st Northants. were relieved in the front line at B.2. Patrols reported enemy working on wire. Two platoons of the Royal Irish Regiment, 36th Redmond's Division, were attached for instruction. Our trench strength was only 200. " A " Company 60, " B " 30. " C " 40, " D " 40 and Battalion H.Q. 20. Lieutenant Lloyd Evans commanded " A " and " B," and Captain Harriss " C " and " D." The trenches here were good in parts, narrow and deep. Company H.Q. (" A " and " B ") was an old German dug-out originally attached to a " whizz-bang " gun pit. It was a type of the usual dug-out in those days, very low with plank beds, the only place where one could really get a rest. Steel helmets had not then been introduced, and many were the bumps caused by too hurried rising. There was the usual disadvantage of occupying the old German front line, the doorways facing the enemy, who were from 150 to 200 yards away. As usual their wire was good and ours bad.

Rations from the first entry into the line had always been delivered in sandbags, six men to each bag. and the system was found to work well, although stray pieces of sandbag in the tea would often be found. Our attached Irish friends would have a way of their own at first, but the result was so disastrous that they later adopted the sandbag system.

On December 30th the enemy exploded two mines. The usual " stand to." when for an hour every man was on his fire step, and every officer with his men, was just over at 5.30 p.m. when, as the officers were entering their dug-out, it seemed to lurch from side to side as if an earthquake had arrived. At the same moment the enemy opened intense rifle and artillery fire. The officers were out immediately, but the men were before them on their fire steps, returning shot for shot in good earnest. Telephone wires were cut, and Battalion Headquarters were without news for some time. The Irish had a bad time as it was their first time in, and they inquired if this sort of thing happened every night. The 56th London Division on our left got the brunt of the storm, but their casualties were not heavy. Thus was established the Hairpin Crater, but that same night a new trench was cut across the Hairpin, and by the morning the enemy, who had occupied the crater, found themselves opposite a newly cut trench probably more formidable than before. Our only casualty that night was Corporal Lidford of the Transport, who was wounded while going up with rations.

Digitized by Google

On December 31st a high-speed engine was suspected south of Newport Sap, and our "heavies" obtained several direct hits on Puits 13. New Year's Day found the Battalion still in the front line, but at night they were relieved by the 10th Gloucesters, and moved to billets previously occupied in Mazingarbe, where the delayed Christmas and New Year festivities were held in the Brewery. Cleaning up both of the person and of the village was the order of the day, the end of the village being shelled on January 3rd. Next day came a surprise, for it was learned that the Battalion was to join the 166th Brigade of the 55th Division, which turned out to be the old West Lancashire Division reformed, most of the units having come out independently, and having been attached, as in our case, to other Regular Divisions. The advance party left on the 5th, and on the 7th the Battalion marched to Bethune, having been inspected and cordially thanked by G.O.C. 1st Division, General Holland, the previous day. The train left Bethune at mid-day and arrived at Pont Remy a few miles from Abbeville about 7 p.m. Here two guides were found, one of whom stayed to guide Transport, the other, Private Bettany, setting off with the Battalion. It was dark, and the guide had only been over the road once before. The distance was supposed to be 11 miles, and the Battalion stepped out quite cheerfully, but gradually became quieter and quieter until there was not a sound to be heard but the ceaseless tramping of many feet. Halts as usual were given every hour, and everything seemed to be going well when an unexpected halt and "about turn" brought out the fact that the guide had lost his way. Back along the same road to the last village passed, and the right road was supposed to have been found, but again, after a mile or two, a return had to be made to the selfsame village. Here the Adjutant, Lieutenant Milnes, took the matter in hand, and by map and compass found the correct route. By now, the Transport, which had been left behind unloading at Pont Remy, had caught the Battalion up at a point where the wrong turn had been made, and now halted to let the Battalion pass, the cookers going on to prepare tea at the next village, where the much-tried men had a short rest and a refreshing drink of tea. By this time it was 2 a.m. Once more on the long, long trail, which was only continued now by sheer doggedness. Some slept as they walked, and most fell asleep at the halts, which now became more frequent.

Digitized by Google

One has only vague recollections of the closing stages of that march, but at last. about 6 a.m., the destination, Fresnoy, was reached, and the whole Battalion, as one man, dropped into billets and slept. That "Bettany march" became a byword, and whenever in the years to come, a wrong road happened to be taken, the cry came promptly, "Send for Bettany!"

Digitized by Google

Chapter VII.

FORMATION OF THE 55TH DIVISION.

ARRAS.

February to July, 1916.

JANUARY 8th was decidedly a day of rest, but by the next day cleaning up was finished, and all was merry and bright when the new Brigadier, General L. Green Wilkinson, inspected the Battalion on the 10th. The 166th Brigade H.Q. were at Mereles-sart, and the 55th Divisional H.Q. at Hallencourt.

Also on the 10th a draft of 46 men joined, some being "blowbacks" from the Second Battle of Ypres. A very quiet enjoyable time was spent at Fresnoy for over three weeks, during which all the old members of the Battalion, who had now been out nearly 12 months, went on leave. The mornings were spent in general training, the afternoons in sports and games. On January 28th another draft of 39 men joined, including again some old members. On January 29th the Battalion took part in a divisional concentration march, and were inspected by Lord Cavan, G.O.C. XIV. Corps. The organisation of the Division being now complete, preparations were made for more trench warfare, and on February 4th the Battalion moved by route march through Vergies and Heucourt to Metigny-Laleu and billeted for the night. Next day through Longprè and Frixecourt to St. Leger-les-Domart, and on the 6th to Ribeaucourt. Here there was a rest of three days, the Battalion practising trench digging and attack. The march was continued on the 10th to Halloy, where huts were occupied in a quagmire. Next day there was a move back of two miles to Amplier, where the huts and surroundings were so bad that the M.O., Lieutenant Deighton, insisted on the men being accommodated in billets

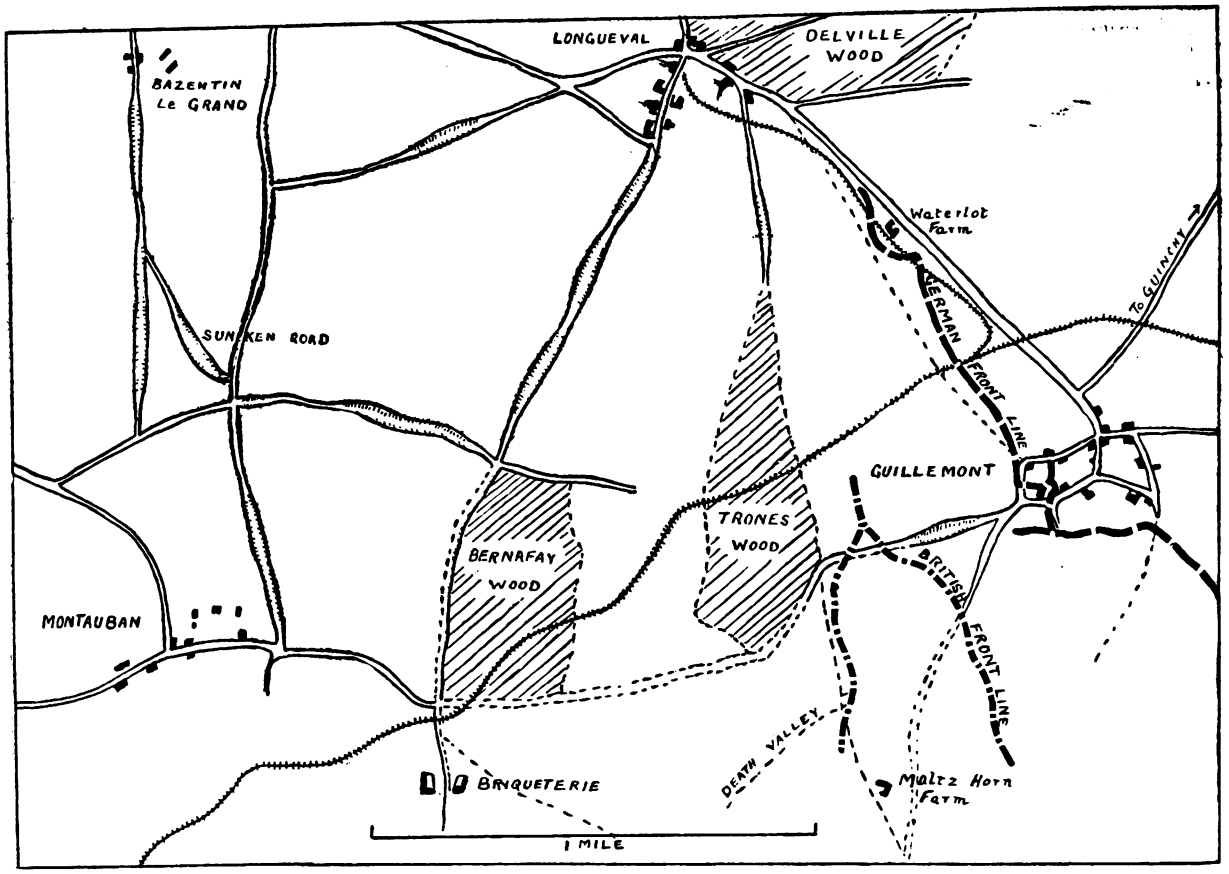
Digitized by Google

in the village. The Battalion was now nearing the line, and the next day's march brought us to Pommiers, where the men had to be kept under cover till dark and then marched by platoons to Berles-au-Bois, Transport following later, but there was not much rest that night, as Berles-au-Bois had to be cleared before dawn. While the Battalion marched to Riviere the Transport and Stores went back to Saulty, which entailed a march of nine miles each way with rations at night. At Riviere, which was a large scattered parish of several villages, the Battalion was divided, two companies occupying billets in Grosville and two companies being in the quarry. Two days were spent in digging communication trenches, and on the 17th the Battalion relieved the 10th Liverpool Scottish in the front line at Bellacourt. The other two battalions in the Brigade were the 5th North Lancs. and the 5th South Lancs. The Transport had moved the previous day to Monchiet, where bombs were received for the first time, two being dropped by a Boche aeroplane in broad daylight, a very rare experience at that time behind the line. It will be remembered that while in the 1st Division at Mazingarbe, the machine gunners had begun to work as a separate unit, but they returned to the Battalion for the move to Fresnoy. Now again they were detached, forming a Brigade Machine Gun Company, having one of our officers, Lieutenant Roper, in command, and another, Lieutenant Rome, as Adjutant. Their headquarters were in Grosville (or Bellacourt) so they were in constant touch with the Battalion.

Things were very quiet in this sector. The trenches were deep, clean and dry, the dug-outs roomy, and the communication trenches safe. The enemy artillery was never very aggressive, and the folds of the land enabled Transport to move during daylight, except on certain forbidden roads. At night rations could be taken very near to Battalion H.Q., thus saving the carrying parties much fatigue. The weather was good for the most part, and the trenches being well constructed, required little in the way of repairs. It is due to the French to acknowledge that these trenches were vastly superior to those taken over from them at Ypres, but at the same time it is hardly fair to compare the two sectors. At any rate we were all thankful that our lot had fallen in such pleasant places. Casualties there were, of course, but they were few and far between, except for the last week at Agny on the left of Bellacourt and nearer Arras. From

Digitized by Google

GUILLEMONT - 1916.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

February 13th to July 10th, on which date the Battalion left the Bellacourt trenches, our total casualties were :—

	Officers.	N.C.O.'s and men.
Killed and died of wounds ...	... 1	2
Wounded	... 1	10

This period of five months was easily the quietest enjoyed by the Battalion, and as there were still many officers and men who had weathered the storms of 1915, it may be expected that they appreciated their good fortune to the full. It follows that the chronicles of those months will not be of much general interest.

The Brigade was always in the line in the right sector, two Battalions in the front line, and two in reserve. Sometimes the Battalion was in the right sub-sector, and sometimes in the left. When in reserve fatigues, cleaning up, baths, etc., filled the time. On February 26th Battalion went into divisional reserve at Bavincourt, but only one night was spent there as the divisional billeting area at that time was very vague. The result was a move to La Herlière on the 27th. Transport had joined the Battalion at Bavincourt from Monchiet, and moved with it to La Herlière. Everybody was "fed up." The weather was cold, the roads were covered with snow, and the billets were not equal to those "in the line." Added to which the fatigue parties had to walk miles through the snow to their work, bathing had to be done regimentally, *i.e.*, in any old tub with "scrounged" hot water, and the underclothes, once washed, would never dry. La Herlière was probably the one black spot in an otherwise ideal part of the front. The Lewis gun was now coming to the front, and while in reserve classes of instruction were held in a draughty old hut, lately occupied by the Indian Cavalry. The Brigadier inspected the Transport for the first time, and expressed his pleasure at its condition. The Transport Officer was on leave. the Quartermaster acting, and what a sweat he and the Adjutant had to get the wagons ship-shape after the muddy roads. Lieutenant Briggs and a fatigue party were pressed into service and the last wagon was being wiped down after being brought from the farm pond when the Brigadier rode on to the field. The preparations for that inspection seem very primitive in the light of later inspections and

Digitized by Google

shows, where the 5th King's Own Transport was always to the fore.

Much to everybody's delight the Battalion was back in the line on March 6th, the Transport two days later moving to Saulty. The Battalion occupied the left sub-sector, relieving the 10th Scottish.

" A " Company	Right of Osiers.
" C " Company	Left of Osiers.
" B " Company	Soutiens.
" D " Company	Grosville.
H.Q.	Sunken Road.
Aid Post	Bretencourt.

It was during this tour that Captain Lloyd Evans was killed under very unfortunate circumstances. The Transport Officer and Quartermaster, after delivering rations on the night of March 14th, went to Battalion H.Q., where they met Captain Evans. He walked back with them to their horses, and as they rode away shouted " good-night " at the fork road. Next morning his body was found about 100 yards away, so that he must have received an unlucky bullet immediately after they left. He was a gallant officer and a favourite with all, and his loss was very keenly felt.

On March 23rd some long-delayed awards for the Second Battle of Ypres were announced as " immediate awards " by the Commander-in-Chief. They included one M.C. and seven D.C.M.'s. (See Appendix). On the same day Lieutenant-Colonel Liddell, O.C. 55th Divisional Train, inspected the Transport, and gave an excellent report on it. On March 30th " C " and " D " Companies went to Saulty in Divisional Reserve, being joined by " B " Company on the following day, " A " Company remaining at Bellacourt. The Battalion was back again in the line on April 7th, relieving the Scottish in the Osiers. On the 10th officers of the 37th Division reconnoitred trenches, and on the 13th a draft of 23 Lewis gunners arrived, the Battalion being now in possession of eight Lewis guns. The " black patch " distinguishing badge was adopted on April 21st, and on the 25th the Battalion was completed with steel helmets. On May 1st the Battalion went into Brigade Reserve at Bellacourt, and on the 2nd Transport moved once more, this time to L'Arbret, the Divisional Area still being obscure. The

Digitized by Google

Battalion went to huts at Gouy on the 3rd, being again in Divisional Reserve. Here a draft of one officer and 52 men joined, and the time was spent in fatigues and inspections. On the 6th the Division was transferred from the VIIth to the VIth Corps, which probably accounts for Transport and Stores once more moving to Monchiet, where they were left in peace for a long time. On the 11th the Battalion relieved the Scottish in the right sub-sector in Willows, Grange and Soutiens, one company of the Loyal North Lancs. being attached as the Brigade had taken over more trenches on the right. On the 13th the 3rd Army Commander, Lieutenant-General Snow, paid a visit, and another draft of one officer and 35 men joined. All the original members of the Battalion were inoculated about this time, as they had not been attended to since the first inoculation in 1914. Also the British Army was getting more vicious, as orders were received to re-sharpen all bayonets. On May 27th the first of the many horse shows in which the Battalion entered was held at Monchiet. It was only a Brigade Show organised by the Transport Officers, but it resulted in keen competition between the King's Own and the Scottish.

The old smoke helmets (very efficient they were thought to be at the time), consisting of a cloth bag, impregnated with chemicals and with celluloid eyepieces, were now in the possession of every officer and man, and on March 30th they were put on in earnest, as a gas alarm went up about 9 p.m. Six officers who had joined that day, and were proceeding to Battalion H.Q. when the alarm went, wondered if that was the usual thing. A new Second in Command arrived on June 2nd, viz., Captain R. H. Anderson Morshead of the Devons. On the 4th the Battalion went into Divisional Reserve in the huts at Gouy, and on the same day it was announced that more belated honours had been awarded for the Second Battle of Ypres. Lieutenant-Colonel F. Eaves receiving the D.S.O., the Quartermaster being promoted to Captain, and six N.C.O.'s and men receiving the Military Medal. During the rest at Gouy, much attention was given to gas precautions, 200 men per day passing through gas in a specially prepared chamber. The Divisional Band, which had recently been formed, gave a performance, and sports were held on the 11th. Permission had also been obtained for the men to wear shorts, and the trousers were accordingly cut down, much to everybody's satisfaction. There

Digitized by Google

was naturally great waste in the process, and the practice was forbidden in 1917. Much saving to the country would have resulted if the Army had provided shorts for the summer, but one unit had no hope of persuading the higher authorities. However, for that one summer the men enjoyed comfort about the knees, and even during the wet and muddy days on the Somme they preferred the shorts to the wet sagging trousers.

On June 12th the Battalion relieved the Scottish in the left sub-sector (Willows and Grange), and on the 14th summer-time was adopted for the first time. Also the stretcher bearers were armed for the first time on the 14th, the Geneva Convention having by this time become a dead letter. While the Battalion was in the line for this tour, the first Divisional Horse Show was held near Gouy. It occupied two days, the 17th and 18th, and only a few officers were able to leave the line to witness our Battalion Transport secure the first prize for most points in all classes. The prizes on that occasion were distributed by the Army Commander, General Allenby, later the Conqueror of Palestine. On the 17th Lieutenant-Colonel Eaves, D.S.O., gave up command of the Battalion, returning to England to report to the War Office, and two days later Major C. A. W. Anderson of the 2nd North Staffords arrived and took over the command. At this time the Battalion was in reserve at Bellacourt, where Second Lieutenant N. H. Gregory was wounded while out with a working party. Artillery activity was increasing, and by June 25th the firing was very heavy down south, where preparations were being made for the first Somme attack, on July 1st. All through the first week of the Somme Battle the Battalion was in reserve at Bellacourt, till on July 10th it was relieved by the 5th Sherwood Foresters and proceeded to billets at Beaumetz. Here six officers of the 1/5th Royal Scots joined, Second Lieutenants Dobie, Macfarlane, Good, Farquharson, Westwater and Robertson. They were a right good crowd, and were always to the fore in times of stress. Four of them were wounded and one, Captain Robertson, was killed.

Only one night was spent at Beaumetz, the Battalion going to the line further to the left of the Riviere Sector and nearer Arras. The place was called Agny, and a very rough week was spent there. The enemy was very nervous owing to the attacks on the Somme, and our trenches were bombarded day and night with trench mortars and rifle grenades. The com-

Digitized by Google

munication trenches and Agny itself were bombarded with "heavies," and casualties were frequent. The "G" trenches, as they were called in this sector, were badly damaged, and Grouse Street C.T. was blown in in three places. A smoke barrage was attempted from our side, several battalions taking part, but the wind veered and it proved a failure. On the 17th this very unhealthy sector (compared with Riviere) was left, the Battalion being relieved by the 6th Yorks, and the former billets at Beaumetz were occupied for the night.

Digitized by Google

Chapter VIII.

THE SOMME.

August to September, 1916.

ON the morning of July 18th the Battalion, accompanied by the Transport, which had moved from Monchiet to Simencourt on the 11th, began the journey to the Somme. The first stop was at Sombrin, where two days were allowed for the Battalion to get rid of all encumbrances and refit for serious business, and on the 20th the whole Battalion marched to Bouquemaison. These marches towards the Somme were undertaken in easy stages, starting very early in the morning, and arriving in billets well before noon, so that the men had long rests during the heat of the day. On the 21st Boisbergues was reached. This little village was thoroughly enjoyed, as a clear flowing stream ran down one side of the only street, and here the men waded and washed their feet during the greater portion of a very warm day. Next day the first stage of the march was completed on arrival at Prouville. Here three days were spent, during which more re-organisation took place and a draft of 87 men from the 6th Cheshires joined. This was a very unlucky draft, as their names very soon appeared in the casualty lists, and by the end of the year, although they were scattered through all parts of the Battalion, there were very few of them left. On the 24th the Battalion was put to the test, as Transport, with cookers and stores, left by road, and the Battalion had to cook its meals as best it could with any local material available, but this was only for one day, as next morning, as early as 4.15 a.m., the Battalion marched to Candas, entrained for Mericourt, and marched to Ville sur Ancre (Ville sous Corbie) where Transport had arrived earlier in the day, having stayed the previous night at Coisy. Ville sur Ancre was very low lying, and it was difficult to find sufficient dry ground for the bivouacs. Bathing, however, made amends for the damp situation. So far there were few signs of the great battle which had been raging since

Digitized by Google

July 1st, but on July 27th the Battalion moved forward between fields piled with empty ammunition boxes, mostly 18-pounders, and a feature of this part of the country was the plentiful supply of empty shell boxes, which, built into walls, with an oilsheet on top, made excellent bivouacs. On this night the Battalion had such bivouacs near the sand pit in front of Meaulte, some being in old artillery dug-outs. (Map ref. E.24b 2.8. France 62 D.N.E.) The Ancre was still not far away, and bathing was again indulged in. On July 30th orders were received to move forward to Wellington Redoubt (F.13b). On the way up the enemy dropped bombs which fell wide. The Battalion was on very short notice to leave its dug-outs and bivouacs, but the actual move did not take place till 5.30 a.m. on August 1st, when reserve trenches were occupied in the Talus Boisé. The Transport and Stores were now left behind between the Citadel and the Wellington Redoubt. The Battalion had only just time to shake down in its new quarters, for the same evening a working party of 10 officers, 28 N.C.O.'s and 350 men went to dig communication trenches on the east of Trones Wood. The casualties from shell fire were two men killed and seven wounded in Talus Boisé, and one man killed and four wounded in the working party. At 4.30 a.m. on August 2nd one officer per company proceeded with the Colonel to reconnoitre the area before Guillemont, that being apparently the objective of the Division. At night another large working party went out to dig and consolidate an advanced trench before Guillemont, and here Second Lieutenant R. Irvine was killed, being buried at Talus Boisé Cemetery. The area round the reserve trenches occupied in the Talus Boisé was pretty constantly shelled, but the men after the first day were kept well under cover and casualties were few. During the night of the 2nd many shells also fell round about the transport lines, but again no casualties. On the morning of the 3rd it was discovered that the Guillemont working party had suffered besides Second Lieutenant Irvine killed, two officers and 12 men wounded. During the 3rd the Second in Command, Major Anderson Morshead, and other officers reconnoitred the Guillemont Sector, and another working party of five officers and 250 men went up to continue the task of the previous night. They came under a heavy artillery barrage, the casualties being severe, including Second Lieutenant W. K. Good wounded, Second Lieutenant

Digitized by Google

T. S. Blakeley slightly wounded (at duty), 12 men killed, 40 wounded and four missing. Parties of "A" and "B" Companies were very badly broken up, but the remnants were collected and went forward to complete their work. Four of the wounded men afterwards died in hospital. Another working party went out on the 5th under Captain T. C. Owtram. Casualties, one officer slightly wounded, and four men wounded, including three slightly.

Transport moved farther from the road on the 5th owing to shelling. On the 6th the Talus Boisé trenches were heavily shelled, and at 8 p.m. the Battalion received a much needed change, moving back to ammunition box bivouacs above the Citadel. In further reference to the bad time the working party endured on the night of the 4th/5th, Lieutenant J. P. B. Dobie and Second Lieutenant L. A. Westwater of the 5th Royal Scots, attached, particularly distinguished themselves. They evacuated the wounded, rallied their parties, and going forward, completed their allotted task. The move back to the Citadel was only in preparation for the Battalion to take part in the attack on Guillemont. On the 7th two days' rations were issued, and at 6 p.m. an urgent order was received from Brigade to the effect that one company of the 1/5th King's Own should relieve one company of the 164th Brigade at the Briqueterie at 10 p.m., and to be accompanied by the Machine Gun Company. Platoons were to move at 200 yards intervals and four men per gun were to be supplied to the M.G. Company for carrying ammunition in case of a move forward.

Operation orders issued by Brigade contained the following instructions :—

> "166th Brigade may be required at any moment.
>
> "Battalions should be ready to move at very short notice in the event of Brigade being required.
>
> "165th Brigade would seize position B.1c 20.25 to T.25a 3.2. 164th Brigade would seize Guillemont and hold eastern edge of village.
>
> "Battalion would go into attack not stronger than 20 officers, 750 other ranks. Remainder to stay with Transport."

"A" Company under Captain Fawcett set off to the Briqueterie at 7.30 p.m. The remainder of the Battalion was ordered to stand by and to remove boots only that night.

Digitized by Google

Stores were drawn during the evening for two bombs, two sandbags, pick and shovel for every man. The night passed without further incident, but about 9.30 a.m. on the 8th the Battalion was again warned to be ready to move at short notice. "A" Company reported Briqueterie relieved, two men being buried by shell, but dug out, and no other casualties. The Company was forming carrying parties and conducting prisoners back to Brigade. No reliable information from the front. The Battalion was kept standing by all day, the tension being somewhat relieved by the Divisional Band playing in the evening. At last orders came to move at 10 p.m. At a conference of Company Commanders the Colonel explained the situation. The attack of the 164th and 165th Brigades had not been a success. The 165th Brigade had almost reached its objective and the 164th Brigade had run right through Guillemont and had begun to dig in 200 yards beyond the village, but the enemy, who had hidden in dug-outs, afterwards came out and attacked the 1/8th Liverpool Irish and the 1/4th King's Own (164th Brigade) in rear. Some were killed and others taken prisoners, but according to an aeroplane report some still held out although surrounded. The position of the 165th Brigade was obscure, but the 166th Brigade was to endeavour to extricate the remnants of the 164th Brigade with the help of the 165th. The Battalion was ready to move, but at 9 p.m. a message was received to "stand by" and await orders. At 10.45 p.m. the order to move came, and the Battalion moved off at 11.30 p.m., the operation orders being received at the same time. Six officers and 50 men were left behind. It was a long march on a pitch dark night, and there was severe shelling as the Battalion reached its assembly positions in Dublin and Casement trenches at 3.50 a.m. on the 9th. The march had been particularly severe, especially going through Maricourt, where long lines of French transport had to be passed. It is difficult for those who have not experienced it to realise the enormous strain on infantry when passing transport on a dark night, for the roads being narrow, and the wagons occupying the greater part of the road, the poor foot-sloggers were driven into the mud at the sides and stumbled along as best they could. Again the noise of the wagons drowned the scream of the shells, and prevented that plunge for cover when a shell was coming too close. On arrival at the assembly position almost the first

Digitized by Google

shell which arrived was of the phosphorus variety, a weird thing with a somewhat dull burst and then a red fire in the air with long streamers like comets proceeding from the centre, and setting fire to any inflammable material within range. On this occasion a dump of Very lights was caught, and the whole Battalion was exposed to view, with the result that the enemy immediately commenced shelling with 5.9's. One shell killed and wounded several men, and Captain A. S. Seward was wounded, but after a moment's hesitation the Battalion went on to its positions. Here the Colonel had the first opportunity of reading his operation orders, and calling Company Commanders he gave out his own orders. Zero was 4.20 a.m. and at that hour the companies moved forward to relieve the Liverpool Scottish after their attack. Many casualties were caused by a barrage, and on arrival it was found that the trenches were overcrowded, so a position was taken up immediately in rear in shell holes. Later in the day the companies withdrew to trenches near the Briqueterie, where Battalion H.Q. were established. Meanwhile orders had been received at the Transport for the four senior officers to proceed at once to Brigade H.Q., and the remaining officers and "all details" to join the Battalion. The casualties for the day were:—

Captain Briggs, Captain Seward, Second Lieutenant Daniels wounded.

Other ranks, 10 killed, 45 wounded, one missing.

Captain Owtram took command of "C" Company vice Captain Briggs. August 10th was passed in comparative quiet, and at night the Battalion was relieved by the 8th Queen's, moving to bivouacs S.E. of the Citadel, the usual ammunition boxes always seeming to be handy. August 11th was fine and warm and the men got a much needed rest and time for cleaning up. Baths even were available at the Citadel. On the 12th officers went to reconnoitre the Maltz Horn area. A warning came to be ready to move at short notice, special "attack" stores being accordingly issued. Later, information came that the Brigade would not be wanted. At 9 p.m. O.C. Companies were informed of a scheme of operation for an attack on the 16th by the 1/5th King's Own and 1/5th Loyals. Two days would be given to practising the attack on identical trenches, and the 15th would be spent in the trenches preparing and

Digitized by Google

observing. The following day everybody went into the scheme whole-heartedly, for they felt that now at last they had been given a chance. The scheme seemed to be a real good, one, but it would be waste of time to give it in detail, for when all preparations had been made and the two battalions felt confident of success, at 7 p.m. on the 13th came orders for the Battalion to move to Talus Boisé that night and provide working parties amounting to 300 men. The attack on the 16th as far as the 1/5th King's Own was concerned was cancelled. Three working parties went out, but only one completed its task, the other two finding no guides. It was afterwards discovered that both had become casualties. On the 14th the weather was unsettled. The Battalion was told of relief at night, but warned that working parties would be required. The story of that night must be told in full, for it was indeed a memorable one.

There were two parties, one under Major Anderson Morshead and the other under Captain Harriss.

The first party consisted of :—

(*a*) Covering party. " B " Company, 50 other ranks with two Lewis gun teams under Second Lieutenant Higginson.

(*b*) Digging party. " A " Company, 70 other ranks under Captain Fawcett and Second Lieutenant Gaulter.

Their task was to dig a new trench 4ft. 6in. deep.

The second party consisted of :—

" D " Company : Other ranks 54, bombers 36. " B " Company : Other ranks 10, police 3, pioneers 3.

Under Lieutenant Holmes and Second Lieutenant Macfarlane.

Their task was to complete a fire trench running from ———

Seventy-five per cent. shovels and 25 per cent. picks would be carried.

The night was bright and moonlight, and the fire trench to be dug at distances varying from 30 to 100 yards from the enemy. The men were ordered to dig in a kneeling position, and the parties were to remain at work till the tasks were completed. Fortunately no hostile artillery fire was directed against the working parties, but the casualties from rifle fire tell their own tale.

One officer, Second Lieutenant Higginson, killed.

Sixteen other ranks killed, 34 other ranks wounded.

Digitized by Google

Captain Harriss's account :—

" My party consisted of myself, Second Lieutenant A. W. W. Holmes and Second Lieutenant W. S. Macfarlane (killed in an aeroplane accident in June, 1918) together with 106 other ranks. We marched from Talus Boisé about 7 o'clock on the evening of August 14th, 1916, with instructions to report to the Brigade Major in the front line opposite Guillemont. We also had a parting injunction from the Brigadier, General Green Wilkinson, that it was most essential to complete the digging, as the honour of the Brigade and Division depended on it. Several other battalions had attempted the job before us.

" We marched by way of Faviere Wood and Maltz Horn trench, and had to skirt three heavy barrages, one very heavy one in Death's Valley being difficult. We arrived at our destination without any casualties and found the Brigade Major.

" Having reported, I took a tape and set out with a Corporal to trace the line to be dug—about 150 to 180 yards. I got across No Man's Land all right and connected the two points by tape without giving the job away, but the Boche was very close, and as soon as we started to place the men for digging he got alarmed and opened a heavy rifle fire and some machine-gun fire, and our casualties began almost at once. At the nearest, the Boche was within 30 yards of us. The digging was done under great difficulties and the casualties were very heavy, but the men stuck to their task remarkably well, and Holmes and Macfarlane were both particularly good and brave in encouraging them. The N.C.O.'s worked exceedingly well. Corporal Sanderson, afterwards C.S.M. of ' D ' Company, and killed in September, 1917, was outstanding. The stretcher bearers deserved great credit for that night's work.

" We managed to cut right through eventually, but when we came to march out we found our casualties to have been exceedingly heavy. We marched back through Death's Valley, and were there caught by the morning strafe, which gave us a few casualties, and we arrived at the Citadel about 6.30 a.m. on August 15th."

Meanwhile the Battalion was relieved by the 10th Royal Welsh Fusiliers and returned to the bivouacs they had vacated the previous night. The working parties did not arrive back till between 6 and 7 o'clock next morning, but after a couple of hours' sleep the men were all out cleaning and shaving in

Digitized by Google

readiness for a parade at 11 a.m. Only the officers and men of the working parties paraded, for the Major-General wanted to thank them personally for the good work of the previous night. He spoke of the paramount importance of, and the equally great difficulty in performing the task assigned to them, which would both provide for the incoming division a starting point for an assault, and also connect up in one trench the British front line. He laid great stress on the fact that the work done that night was every bit as much a fight as an actual bayonet assault, though the men were fighting with picks and shovels against an enemy armed with rifles. He said that he had assigned the task to General Green Wilkinson, and he had assigned the task to the King's Own, knowing well that he could rely on that Battalion to complete the task. The Major-General said he was proud to have the King's Own under his command, adding that he hoped they would have a chance in future of proving themselves against an enemy they could see. He called up and thanked personally the officers in command of the parties, Major Morshead and Captain Harriss, for the splendid way in which they commanded their parties, and for the excellent work done under such dangerous circumstances.

At about noon the same day, August 15th, orders were received to move at 2.30 p.m. towards a rest area. The Battalion marched to Mealte along with Transport, passing the Brigadier at the Carcaillot Farm, where the Divisional Band played the regimental march. Billets, such as they were, were found at Mealte, and the men bathed in the Ancre on the 16th. The following day Transport, with cookers and all baggage, left to go by road to Chèpy, staying one night at Daours and the next at Soues, after passing Amiens. The following day, the 19th, the Transport arrived at Chèpy in advance of the Battalion, who, the same evening, entrained at Edgehill Station, near Dernancourt, and after several hours in the train, detrained at Martainville and marched to Chèpy, arriving in billets at 5.45 a.m. on the 20th. The rest of the day was spent in sleeping and resting. The following days were spent in the usual cleaning up, kit inspections, training and reorganisation. The weather was bright and hot, and a much appreciated change was given to the men, who in parties of 30 went to Ault at the seaside for three days. Four officers also had three days' leave in Paris. On August 26th there was

Digitized by Google

a route march to keep the men fit, and on the 27th a long-delayed church parade. The rest was now nearing its end, for on the 28th Transport left once more in advance of the Battalion on the way back to the Somme, staying for the two following nights at Ramburelles and Ailly sur Somme respectively. The weather had now broken, a heavy thunderstorm saturating the men with transport as they arrived at Ailly, where they bivouacked in a swamp. Next day was worse, as the rain poured down heavily, and no enthusiasm could be raised, even as they passed through Amiens. The destination this day was simply a field in E.8.c, where the sheaves of corn made passable shelters. The Battalion arrived in the same area, but a quarter of a mile away, having entrained that morning at Pont Remy for Mericourt, marching from there through the heavy downpour. Next day, the 31st, was fine and warm, and all were enabled to dry their clothes, in which, of course, they had been compelled to sleep. But that was the way of all wet days, and it was remarkable how little immediate sickness was caused by the wearing of wet clothes. In the afternoon of the same day the Battalion and Transport, having replaced the sheaves of corn, moved forward again, the Battalion going through Dernancourt and Mealte, and the Transport through Albert, to a field above Dernancourt in E.12a. Orders were received to be ready to move at short notice, but no movement took place for several days. The Battalion was fortunate here in having an abundance of tents on a dry field with a good view of Albert and the surrounding country. Major Atkinson and five other officers joined here, also a draft of 49 men from the 4th Battalion, but these men were not taken into the battle. September 1st passed quietly, the Colonel taking the opportunity to explain the trenches to be occupied in front of Delville Wood. At 3.30 a.m. the following day the Colonel and other officers went up to reconnoitre trenches, and O.C. Runners and 20 runners went to Pommiers Redoubt to report to the 72nd Brigade. At 6 p.m. the Battalion practised a consolidating scheme on the adjoining ridge, arriving back at 10 p.m. Three other officers joined that day. On the 3rd the Battalion was on four hours' notice, but a church parade was held and the men also had baths. At 9 p.m. the notice was shortened to one hour. About the same time the runners, who had reconnoitred the forward area, returned, and all was

Digitized by Google

ready for moving up. Operation orders for move on 4th issued and cancelled, Lieutenant Dobie going back to Albert in charge of the 49 draft. Next day, the 5th, was really the day for relieving the 72nd Brigade. The weather for the last two days had been unsettled and nights in the open were not anticipated with any pleasure. "A" and "C" Companies went to Delville Wood in daylight. "B" and "D" Companies and H.Q. left later, and all found guides at Pommiers Redoubt. Relief was not completed until 7.30 a.m. on the 6th, as it was very heavy going on the now sodden ground. Consolidating work was at once begun, as the trenches were very sketchy. These were joined up and strong points established between Flers Road and Cocoa Lane. Transport moved on the 6th to the Fricourt area near Becordal. The Battalion had things fairly quiet, though on the right Waterlot Farm was heavily shelled. Lieutenant Macfarlane took a patrol to find enemy, and reported none in front German line. One unwounded prisoner surrendered to "A" Company. The early morning of the 7th was again quiet, but later "C" Company H.Q. was heavily shelled. Our own shrapnel was reported to be falling short, causing casualties in "B" and "C" Companies. Orders for 166th Brigade to attack were cancelled later, the usual trench digging taking its place, but the work was delayed through the R.E. officer becoming a casualty. On the 8th the Scottish relieved, and the Battalion went back in reserve at Montauban. Here Battalion H.Q. was heavily shelled, one man being killed and two wounded. On September 9th the details usually left at Transport as a reserve rejoined the Battalion at Montauban. Weeping shells fell in the morning, and at night two working parties went to the front line under Captains Owtram and Harriss. No casualties occurred while at work, but a shell fell behind "D" Company on the return through Delville Wood, killing six men. The 10th was spent quietly at Montauban, the Battalion being relieved by the 10th West Kents and returning to billets in the Transport lines near Fricourt. The weather had been good all the tour. The total casualties were nine men killed and 21 wounded. Next day, the 11th, the Battalion and Transport moved to a new camp of huts and tents opposite Dernancourt on the Albert Road, where the usual clean up took place.

A letter received by the Brigadier, General Green Wilkin-

Digitized by Google

son, from the Divisional Commander, Major-General H. Jeudwine :—

" I wish to congratulate you and your staff, your Commanding Officers and all ranks serving under you on the excellent work the Brigade has shown. Their endurance of prolonged exertion and danger, their resolution, energy and initiative are most creditable and are the best augury possible of the ultimate success of our Army. The work done in pushing our line forward east of Delville Wood will be of the greatest value to the troops who have relieved us, and will have an important influence on future operations. The value of it has been appreciated by the Lieutenant-General Commanding the Corps.

" This work is an instance of the immense fighting value of the spade. Much fine work has also been done with the rifle, bayonet, and bomb, but unless digging had been continued as it has been regardless of fatigue and losses, the object aimed at could not have been achieved.

" We have still much fighting and digging before us, but the 166th Brigade has made a reputation which I feel sure it will maintain no matter what tasks may fall to it in the future."

The weather continued fair but cold. The men were enjoying the rest, playing much football, and one night, out in the open, " The Battle of the Somme," of all pictures, was given on the cinema, to a very critical audience, the general opinion being that there was too much ambulance work shown for home consumption, for the men generally kept these things dark in their letters home.

On the 13th and 14th there was much activity on the Albert Road outside the camp, troops constantly moving towards the front, but nothing was known till on September 15th the great battle began in which the tanks were first used, and which resulted in the capture of Flers opposite the trenches dug by the Brigade in front of Delville Wood. So once again the Battalion, as at Guillemont, had made a successful jumping off point, but undoubtedly the success of the battle was due to the terrifying effect of the new tanks. On the 16th the Battalion and Transport moved forward to a new area south of Albert in E.9a, taking along with them many tents and bivouac sheets. They were welcomed by shells, which caused the moving of some of the shelters farther down the hill. At 2 a.m. on the 17th the Colonel attended a conference at Brigade H.Q., and at

Digitized by Google

3 a.m. proceeded to reconnoitre the new line at Flers. At 3.30 a.m. O.C. companies followed, and at 1 p.m. the Battalion marched to Pommiers Redoubt to await further orders. Transport remained and the vicinity was again shelled in the evening, a haystack coming very handy as cover. At Pommiers Redoubt the Battalion was notified that Sergeant W. Lynch had been awarded the Russian Order of St. George and Private Gray the Military Medal. At 11.45 p.m. the Battalion marched to King's Walk Trench, the one it had dug on the previous tour, to relieve the 8th Queen's, relief being completed at 2 o'clock next morning. On the 18th there was much rain, which continued during the greater part of this tour. At 7.30 p.m. the Battalion moved forward to relieve the 9th King's in the front line, and in doing so, just as they were entering Flers, a shell killed the C.O., Lieutenant-Colonel C. A. W. Anderson, mortally wounded the Medical Officer, Captain J. Deighton, killed the Colonel's orderly, Private Alderson, and the M.O.'s orderly and stretcher bearer, Private Brear, and wounded three others. This was a sad disaster for the Battalion, for both officers were greatly loved by the whole Battalion, and their two orderlies had shared the dangers of the Battalion from the outset, and so far had gone unscathed. The Colonel was a perfect gentleman and gallant officer, full of tact and never out of temper, though his quiet words had always a great effect.

Captain Milnes took command until the Second in Command, Major Anderson Morshead, who had been left behind in reserve at Transport (which had in the meanwhile moved to Pommiers Redoubt), rejoined the Battalion next morning and assumed command. Later in the day, Lieutenant Cornwall, R.A.M.C., arrived and took over the M.O.'s duties. This was on the 19th, when the situation was normal. Work proceeded on the new trenches, but was interrupted by operations on the left, where the New Zealanders joined up. There was heavy rain, and the rum, which in spite of all difficulties had to be got up, was greatly appreciated. On September 20th the French reported enemy activity all along the line, and a counter attack was expected. The weather by now was improving somewhat. A patrol reported the enemy working round a deserted tank on our front, and there was heavy shelling on Flers on our rear. The attack came on the 21st, but the New Zealanders caught the brunt of it, but held

Digitized by Google

their ground. The tank gave much trouble, and at last a Lewis gun team and six others were told off to patrol round it to keep off the enemy. More work was carried out on trenches and the situation was generally normal. On the 22nd there was much aeroplane activity, and our planes used phosphorus bombs on the German "sausages" or kite balloons with great effect. The weather had greatly improved, but there was still much mud. On the night of the 23rd the Battalion was relieved by the 9th King's. who were to take part in the 165th Brigade attack. The relief was carried out without casualties, and the Battalion marched back to Pommiers Redoubt, where the usual home-made bivouacs were set up. Before the relief Captain Owtram took a party to dismantle the tank which had proved such a nuisance during the tour.

The total casualties for this third tour in the Somme battle were :—

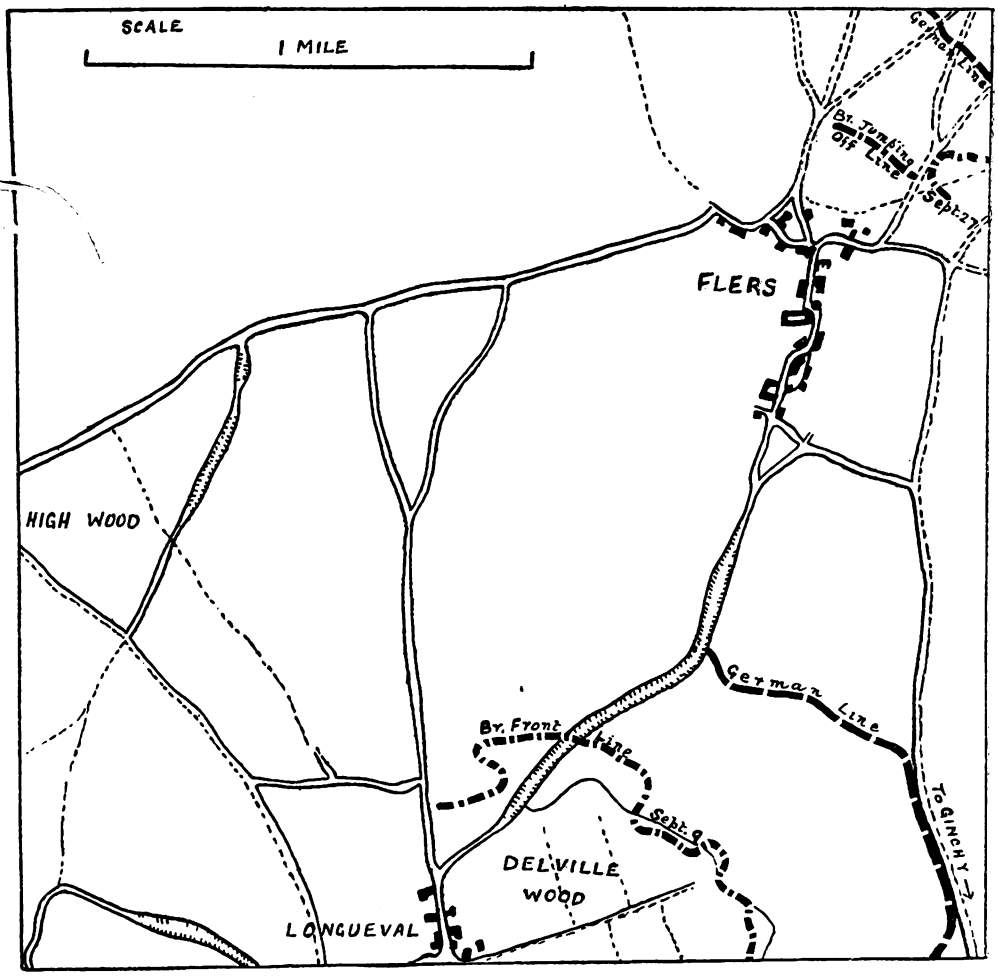
	Officers.	Other Ranks.
Killed	... 2	8
Wounded	... 0	41

A few quiet days followed at Pommiers Redoubt, broken only by an unexpected visit from Boche bombing machines. Previously it had been a remarkable sight at night on the Somme. All the hillsides for miles were lighted up by thousands of candles in the bivouacs. On this night there was a rude awakening, for the ominous droning above told of an unwelcome visitor, and before all lights could be extinguished, "bang," "bang," "bang," came unpleasantly near. In 1917 and 1918 such occurrences were common enough, but on the Somme they came as a very startling surprise. These bombs caused casualties amongst the 1/5th North Lancs. horses.

The attack on the 25th by the 165th Brigade was a great success, which they attributed to the good jumping off trenches made by the 166th Brigade. A working party on the 27th, under Second Lieutenants Robertson and Beatson, was greatly retarded by intermittent shelling, and so concluded the 1/5th King's Own share of the Battle of the Somme. Good work had been done, no doubt, for everybody said so, but the Battalion was not really satisfied. They had dug and dug, and ploughed through mud, and held the front line, they had paved the way for the success of others, but they had never come to grips with

Digitized by Google

FLERS _ 1916.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the enemy, and so they were not satisfied. To work hard and be shot at while doing so, was annoying when they never got a chance of hitting back. These things were not said at the time, they only gradually emerged from men's inner consciousness long after the Somme was only a memory in the realities of Ypres.

Digitized by Google

Chapter IX.

BACK TO THE SALIENT.

1916-1917.

THE journey from the Somme was much like the previous ones. A few days' halt at Ribemont while the Transport went on ahead by road, staying for one night at Argoeuvres, September 29th, and arriving the next at Epagne, near Abbeville. Here they were joined by the Battalion, which had entrained at Mericourt for Longprè, and thence marched to Epagne. Here it was announced that Second Lieutenant Macfarlane had been awarded the Military Cross, and the G.O.C. presented the ribbon and those of Sergeant Lynch and Corporal Gray. At 1.30 a.m. on October 2nd the transport moved to Abbeville for entrainment. The Battalion followed two hours later, the train leaving at 7.15 a.m. and arriving at Proven via Boulogne at 4.15 p.m. the same day. Thus the Battalion was back in the "Salient" which had cost it so dearly in April and May of 1915. The story of Ypres is the most tragic and yet the most heroic perhaps in the whole war, and with the exception of the French parallel in Verdun no other town can stand in the eyes of any of the belligerents as Ypres stands in the eyes of most British soldiers. Few now serving in the Battalion had before been to Ypres, but all knew it was a hot shop, and yet all had a secret longing to go, as it was felt that the British soldier who had never been to Ypres had nothing much to write home about. The Division remained in the Salient for almost exactly a year, and when it left in October, 1917, there were few who were not glad to see the last of it. Billets at Proven were found in L Camp, and on the 4th the Battalion moved by train to Ypres, being billeted in and about the Prison. For those who had been in the Second Battle of Ypres this was a most unique ride, for then the railway was damaged and out of use, now

Digitized by Google

it was in working order, though not yet used with impunity. Transport moved to stables and billets as a going concern near C Camp, only a few hundred yards from where they encamped the night Captain Bingham was killed. This was also a unique experience, for this was the first time they had ever been in a real organised transport camp, and although much work remained to be done, and although many loads of bricks had to be taken from Ypres, before the roads were at all passable, still it was a good camp, and never a shell nor a bomb came near it. After the mud and the discomforts of the Somme it was particularly acceptable. But to return to the Battalion, which from now onwards except for very short periods, was always detached from its Transport and Stores. On October 4th they entered Ypres, and the following morning the C.O., now Lieutenant-Colonel Anderson Morshead, and Company Commanders reconnoitred trenches on both sides of the Zonnebeke road, a few hundred yards nearer Ypres than Frezenberg, where the Battalion lost so heavily in May, 1915. This was now called Potijze Sector, Battalion H.Q. in this sector being in the grounds of the White Chateau. The 1/5th South Lancs. were actually holding this sector, but the King's Own were to relieve them later. The Adjutant, Captain G. C. Milnes, went on leave on the 6th, and Lieutenant Boys Stones took over his duties. One of the first duties of the Battalion was the drainage of the front line, the usual working parties going from the prison area each night. During the following days the officers and men were drilled in the use of the new box respirators, which shortly came into general use. though the old smoke helmets were not discarded for a long time, the one being carried over the right shoulder and the other over the left. Later when gases were introduced with which the smoke helmet could not cope, it was discarded altogether, much to everybody's relief.

When the Division arrived at Ypres, things were fairly quiet, and it was possible to wander round the ruins and renew acquaintance with old billets now razed to the ground. Such a state of things did not suit the Divisional Commander, who was ever a " strafer " and an annoyance to the enemy. Few shells fell into the city when we arrived, but as the Divisional artillery got to work things began to liven up. It was also decided to have a raid, and the 1/5th King's Own were told to get ready for one during their first tour. " A " Company were selected,

Digitized by Google

and immediately set to work on practice trenches behind the Prison. The objective of the raid was the "Mound," a sap which projected most impudently towards our lines. October 13th was the day of relief, but "A" Company was left behind in the prison to continue their preparations, the same Company of the South Lancs. remaining at Potitje in their place. On the 14th the G.O.C. watched the raid practised, and all was considered ready, but on the same day a revolver accident caused the death of Second Lieutenant Dickson, one of the raiding party. It was a most unfortunate loss of a promising officer, but the raid must proceed, and Second Lieutenant Westwater, who was in charge, reconnoitred the position to be raided during the same night. The 15th was a quiet day, and at 6 p.m. the raiding party left the Prison and proceeded to Congreve Walk to make final preparations. A Bangalore torpedo was to be used to blow up the wire and a party of three men was told off to lay it under the enemy wire.

After laying it and setting the fuse, the three men were to retire, the torpedo would explode and blow a gap in the wire, the raiding party would immediately rush through this gap, and kill or capture any enemy found in the sap. At the same time the artillery and trench mortars were to form a barrage. All went well at the beginning, and the torpedo was truly laid without unduly alarming the sentry, but when the explosion followed the wire fell back into its place, and the raiding party found themselves entangled in loose strands of wire. Only Second Lieutenant Westwater and one or two men got into the sap. The rest could only throw bombs, but by this time the

Digitized by Google

enemy was bombing hard and the time for the barrage having ceased, the attacking party had no protection. There was nothing for it but to retire, the casualties being Second Lieutenant Westwater and four men wounded, and about a dozen men being more or less badly cut by wire. All eventually got away, the last man with face wounds, two fingers gone, and shin fractured.

Next day the enemy bombarded our front line with 5.9's, but the casualties were small. October 17th was rather a lively day. The Corps " heavies " bombarded the enemy lines, they retaliated on ours and blew in " D " Company's H.Q., where one signaller was killed and Second Lieutenant Beckett was buried, but was dug out unhurt. Captain Harriss having gone on leave and Second Lieutenant Beckett being somewhat shaken, Second Lieutenant Punchard took over the command of " D " Company. The 18th was fairly quiet except for a few trench mortars. At night there was 20 minutes of heavy shelling, two men of " D " Company being wounded. The same day " A " and " B " Companies relieved " C " and " D " in the front line. There was incessant rain on the 19th, and the trenches became very bad, but next day it cleared up. " D " Company H.Q. were blown in by trench mortars, and Second Lieutenants Dobie and Brooke were both crushed, the former having his collar bone broken. Nothing of importance happened till the 23rd, when the 1/5th King's Own were relieved by the 1/4th King's Own (164th Brigade), and marching to the Asylum, entrained for Brandhoek, and thence marched to C Camp near the Transport lines. The casualties for the tour were :—

	Officers.	Other Ranks.
Killed	—	3
Died of wounds	—	2
Wounded	3	22

The time at C Camp was mostly spent in burying cable to prevent it being cut up by transport and enemy artillery. The weather most of the time was cold and wet, till on the 30th the Battalion relieved the 1/4th King's Own in the Prison, they having previously been relieved in the line by the 1/4th North Lancs. of their Brigade. Next day the Battalion relieved the

Digitized by Google

1/4th North Lancs. in their old trenches, which after so much rain were in a deplorable condition. This entailed much work both for the King's Own and the South Lancs., who followed. There was fair activity on both sides, but no casualties on ours. On November 3rd the Brigadier and later the Major-General inspected the lines, and on the 4th the 1/5th South Lancs. relieved. The Battalion went back to its billets in the Prison. The danger of gas in the Salient was always present, and the direction of the wind was always indicated by wire as " Dangerous " or " Safe." In addition, notice boards were placed in prominent positions showing " Wind dangerous " or " Wind safe," as the case might be. When the former notice appeared, it was an order for all box respirators to be worn at the " alert " position, where they could be adjusted in a few seconds. The men were constantly drilled till all could adjust their respirators in six seconds. Later all box respirators were worn at the " alert " at all times within a certain distance of the front line, this even applying to the horses, but eventually the horse respirators were discarded.

While in reserve at the prison, working parties went up each night for work in the trenches. the weather during these four days being again wet and cold. On the night of November 5th the Transport Sergeant's hut at the Transport lines was burnt to the ground. In these flimsy huts, often put together by the men themselves, there was the ever-present danger of fire, and " fire precautions " were a necessary addition to the endless round of duties. On November 8th the Battalion was back in the front line, " A " and " B " in the fire trench, " D " in Congreve Walk and " C " in the Garden of Eden. Nothing of importance occurred on this tour. The trenches began to show an improvement after the solid work put in by the King's Own and the South Lancs., and at last the Brigadier pronounced them satisfactory. The Army authorities were also beginning to take an interest in cooking, and Captain Stratton of the 2nd Army Catering Depot, after inspecting the cooking arrangements of the Battalion, gave a satisfactory report. This was only the beginning however, and later, when owing to increased enemy " frightfulness," cooking near the front line became an impossibility, the methods employed, and the results achieved in obtaining the men good well-cooked food in the front line were truly remarkable, and would have seemed

Digitized by Google

impossible in the earlier days. But then much became possible when the nation was spending seven millions a day, and transport was not so limited as in the early days.

On November 12th the South Lancs. took over the front line once more, our casualties having been one man killed and two wounded. The usual working parties followed, and on the 14th the railway behind the Prison was heavily shelled, with little damage.

The hutting accommodation at the Transport lines was now complete, but the roads after such heavy rain and constant use were very bad, and the returning ration wagons were loaded up with bricks every night in Ypres, the Battalion finding the brick fatigues and the Belgians checking the loads as the wagons left Ypres. The British public will no doubt foot the bill.

On the 16th the G.O.C. Division visited the Prison, and on the 17th the 164th Brigade, the " Moving Brigade " at this time, took over the Potijze Sector, the 1/4th King's Own relieving the 1/5th King's Own in the Prison. After relief the Battalion went to Strong Points in what was called the " Elverdinghe Line," a reserve line of trenches and strong points, stretching from H.5 outside Ypres to the village of Elverdinghe. with Battalion H.Q. in Elverdinghe Chateau. Here the men got a much-needed rest, for there were no working parties, and even enjoyed a concert in the Church Army Hut. On November 26th the Battalion went to B Camp on the main Ypres-Poperinghe road, but only for one night, for on the 27th it was back at the Prison. Gas precautions became more stringent, the 39th Divisional front receiving a cloud of gas on this date. On November 30th the Brigadier inspected the Battalion and presented medal ribbons for military medals awarded for gallantry in the Second Battle of Ypres. This, it must be borne in mind, was long after the Battle of the Somme, but various unavoidable causes had contributed to the delay.

The Battalion was back in the old sector on December 2nd, relieving the South Lancs. without casualties. Nothing of importance happened this tour, except that on December 6th Captain Briggs was wounded in the face by the accidental premature bursting of a rifle grenade. The South Lancs. relieved on the 7th, the Battalion going to its old billets in and around the Prison. There were the usual cleaning up, baths, and fatigues until the 12th, when the Battalion relieved the South Lancs.

Digitized by Google

In addition to the usual trenches, a strong point named Mill Cotts had been established near the Zonnebeke road. Here the garrison had to lie low all day, and seldom saw any daylight. During this tour the M.O., Lieutenant Cornwall, who had joined during the Somme, left to join the 38th (Cavalry) Division, his place being taken by Captain Gunn of the 2/1st Wessex Field Ambulance. Lieutenant-Colonel Anderson Morshead went on a course to the 8th Corps school, leaving in command Major Milnes, who had been promoted to Second in Command, his place as Adjutant being taken by Lieutenant Macfarlane. Also during this tour Second Lieutenant R. Macdonald and two men were wounded by a premature burst of a rifle grenade, all slight, at duty. There was also a change of M.O., Captain Fletcher relieving Captain Gunn.

On December 18th the Battalion was relieved by the 1/4th North Lancs. of the 164th Brigade and went by train to A Camp outside Vlamertinghe. The G.O.C.-in-C., General Sir Douglas Haig, should have inspected the Brigade at C Camp on the 21st, but owing to heavy rain the parade was cancelled, and a visit by the General to A Camp was also cancelled. The weather continued wild and wet, but parades were carried out when possible and the Brigadier had a thorough inspection of the Lewis guns in their hand-carts. These carts had been adopted on the Somme, but they had proved a great nuisance, and nobody regretted them when they were scrapped later. A church parade, football when possible, and then came Christmas Day. The last had been spent in the trenches at Loos, so all were prepared to enjoy this to the utmost, and the turkey and pudding provided by the Mayoress of Lancaster, and other good things from the "Manchester Guardian" Christmas Fund, helped by decent French beer, and in the evening a concert in the Church Army Hut made up a day to be remembered in those very drab and dreary months. The next two days were fine and sunny, but the shelling of the adjacent Vlamertinghe-Elverdinghe road brought home the fact that there was still a war on, and the end of a very good holiday came on the 28th, when the Battalion again found itself at the Prison. Here Major Milnes left for the 8th Corps Course, Captain Harriss taking over his duties as Second in Command, and when, on December 30th, the Colonel went to the 2nd Army School, Captain Harriss found himself in command. A concert was held

Digitized by Google

in the Magazine opposite the Prison on New Year's Eve, although there was some slight shelling outside, which increased next day, each side seeming to tell the other what to expect in the year 1917. On January 2nd the enemy shelled the square (in front of the Cloth Hall) and the station. That night the Battalion relieved the South Lancs. in the front line. The shelling of Ypres was now getting a daily affair, and careless promenading was attended with some risk. One event of note happened this tour, as Second Lieutenant Foxon went out on patrol and captured three men, part of an enemy patrol. They were rather poor specimens when seen in the prison, but this remark is not meant to detract in the least from the excellence of Second Lieutenant Foxon's performance, which for coolness and daring could not have been surpassed, but rather to show what type of men the enemy were putting into their front line. On January 7th the Battalion was back in Ypres, where, on the 8th, during a heavier bombardment than usual, when the men got down into cellars and dug-outs, one shell landed in a billet, wounding Second Lieutenants Foxon and Stephenson and five men. On the 10th preparations were made for going back into corps rest, and the batteries round about the Prison, which had been annoying the enemy a great deal, received a pretty hot retaliation, the Battalion being in the midst of it all, but taking good cover—nobody was hit. The 13th January was fine, but there was a sharp frost when the Battalion left Ypres for C Camp for one night only previous to entraining for the rest area. Here a serious catastrophe overcame the Battalion, for in the early morning of the 14th, as preparations were being made for leaving camp, a fire broke out in a small hut occupied by the senior N.C.O.'s, and the following had to be removed to hospital badly burnt:—R.S.M. M. Smith, R.Q.M.S. T. Byrne, C.S.M. G. Barrow ("B" Company), Sergeant J. Smith (Provost Sergeant), Sergeant E. E. Cartmell (Sergeant Tailor and Postman), and Private R. Richardson.

The Battalion marched to the Cheesemarket Station at Poperinghe and entrained for Bollezeele, while the Transport, having set off the previous day, arrived at the same time. The rest at Bollezeele lasted three weeks, and it was indeed a rest, but not in the way that is generally understood. It was a rest from the trenches, from fatigue, from wet and cold and from danger, but the men had plenty to do with parades in the

Digitized by Google

morning and games in the afternoon. Football was the chief attraction until the frost made it impossible. Reorganisation of course was essential, as the loss of so many valuable N.C.O.'s through the fire was a very serious one. There were occasional night operations, but they did not keep the men out of bed very long. The frost alternated with rain during the earlier days, but by January 16th the frost gained the mastery, causing a temporary stoppage of the baths. On January 28th there was a Brigade cross-country run, the King's Own coming in second. News arrived on the 29th of the death of C.S.M. Barrow, due to the fire, and a short but impressive memorial service was held in the recreation room. The good time came to an end on February 3rd, when H.Q., "B" and "C" Companies and Transport left Bollezeele, the Transport going by road and staying the night at Winnezeele, while the remainder went by train, halting at D Camp for a few hours and then "B" Company relieved two companies of the 1/4th King's Own in the Canal Bank, a series of reserve dug-outs in the side of the Canal to the west of Ypres. The Canal terminated at this point, forming a "dead end" much "strafed" by the enemy, as they must have known the road there was in constant use. Traffic was often held up at this point owing to the heavy shelling, but the dug-outs in the bank by the side of the Canal were always difficult to hit, and consequently were considered fairly safe. In addition they could be approached by a wooden bridge further down the canal, and consequently the deadly "dead end" could be avoided.

"A" and "D" Companies had remained at Bollezeele, but the next day they also, less one platoon of "D" Company, moved to D Camp, where they remained. The one platoon left at Bollezeele were in a billet where an infectious case was found. On this day, the 4th, the Transport arrived at Edwaardehoek, and took over one of the Transport camps of the 164th Brigade, which had gone to the Bollezeele area. This camp was nearer Poperinghe than the old Transport lines, but it was also nearer the supply railhead, and as a result shells and bombs arrived at times. The frost still continued. "A" and "D" Companies provided working parties for the R.A.S.C. and carried out some training. On the Canal Bank all had gone well with "B" and "C" Companies till on the 6th a shell caused five casualties in "B" Company and one man later

Digitized by Google

died of wounds. A draft of 33 men arrived on the 7th, and on the 9th "B" and "C" Companies were relieved by two companies of the 1/5th North Lancs. and returned to D Camp. The Battalion being all together again, took up the main quarters in D Camp previously occupied by the North Lancs., and this was rather fortunate, as next day a draft of 100 men arrived. There was a fair amount of enemy aerial activity about this time, and on February 14th, the second anniversary of the arrival of the Battalion in France, Edwaardehoek was both bombed and shelled. There were casualties elsewhere, but none in the King's Own Transport lines. Now came signs of thaw, and "thaw precautions" were enforced, which meant that all heavy transport was to be kept off the roads for some days and supplies laid in accordingly. The neglect of these precautions in some instances had a most lamentable effect on the Belgian roads, which were often only surface dressed without solid foundations.

On February 15th the Battalion went back to the Prison preparatory to relieving the 4/5th Black Watch in the Potijze Sector the following day. During the relief the Potijze road was shelled, causing 10 casualties. On the same day the Transport went back to its old winter quarters near C Camp. On the 17th the enemy was either very nervous or intended to be very nasty, for he shelled the front line for 25 minutes and periodically shelled the ration dump at the Potijze cross-roads between 7 and 9.30 p.m. However the luck of the Transport once more held good, and rations were got away during the intervals of the shelling. This shelling of the ration dump went on for a few nights, but otherwise this tour was a quiet one and resulted in no casualties. The 1/5th South Lancs. relieved on the 21st, and the monotonous round of Prison and Potijze Sector seemed to have again set in. Suddenly, on the 23rd, without previous warning, the Battalion was ordered to Proven and K Camp for railway construction. "D" Company and part of "B" were in K Camp as there were not sufficient billets in Proven. Later, billets were found for "B" Company, and "D" Company went by train to Bergues, in the French area, for railway construction. The billeting in Proven still proving unsatisfactory, H.Q. "B" Company and the small detachment of Transport with the Battalion, moved to some divisional train huts outside Proven. A quite enjoyable concert was given at

Digitized by Google

the 46th Casualty Clearing Station, to which the King's Own were invited. Anybody who had any work to be done seemed to know the King's Own were about, and on March 1st a party was called for to begin work on a new aerodrome. These little quiet tasks were interrupted, however, for on March 2nd "A" and "C" Companies moved by train to Ypres to work on the water supply, "B" Company remaining to carry out the aerodrome construction at Proven. "D" Company were still on railway work at Bergues, but on March 6th the Battalion once more girded up its loins for trench work. "D" Company returned by train from Bergues, picked up H.Q. and "B" Company at Proven, and detraining at the Asylum, marched up to the Ecole on the Menin road, where they were joined by "A" and "C" Companies from Ypres, the 1/5th King's Liverpools being the Battalion relieved. The Ecole was the reserve position for the Railway Wood Sector, so it was evident that the 166th Brigade had become the switch or moving brigade, instead of the 164th Brigade. One night only was spent at the Ecole de Bien Faisance, and next night the 1/6th King's Liverpools were relieved in Railway Wood.

"A" Company—Mud Lane (Menin Road) to West Lane communication trench.

"D" Company—West Lane communication trench to Gully trench.

"C" Company—Right Support in Beek Trench.

"B" Company—Left Support in Beek Trench.

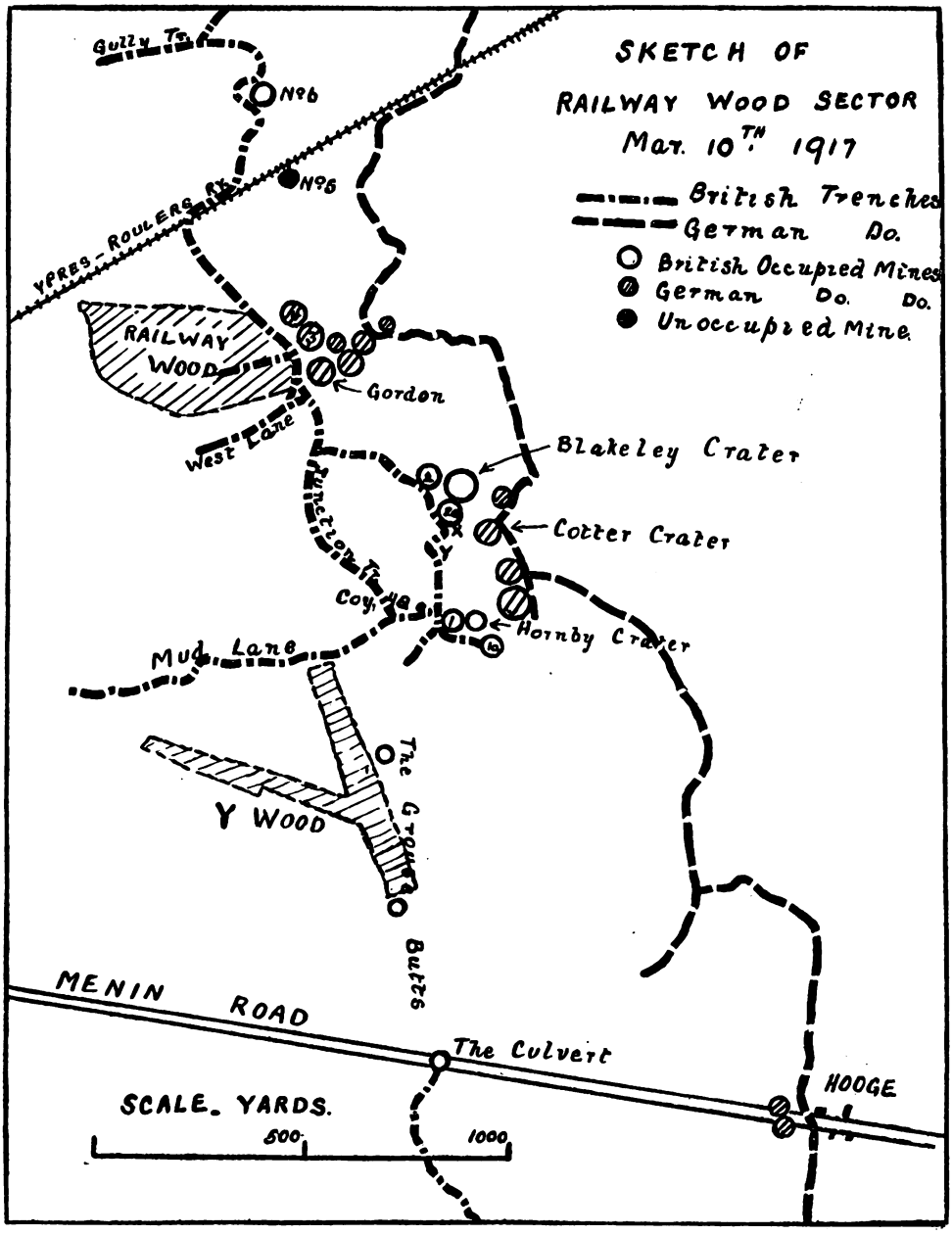
Consolidating party under Second Lieutenant Blakeley in Mud Lane.

The C.O., Lieutenant-Colonel Anderson Morshead, had gone on leave, leaving Major G. C. Milnes in command, with Captain Harriss Second in Command.

The right front line was rather curious. From West Lane C.T. there was a continuous trench, but from a point 30 yards south of Mud Lane C.T. to the Menin Road there was no trench. The intervening space was, however, covered during the night by two or three posts known as the Grouse Butts, which were manned only by night. There was also a post on the Menin Road known as the Culvert, which was the beginning of the next divisional sector. All the intervening land was marshy, and the men returning from the Grouse Butts each morning required a dry change of clothing.

Digitized by Google

BLAKELEY CRATER.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Railway Wood was the scene of great activity among the miners of both sides, but at this time our miners had won the ascendancy, and the enemy devoted all his time in endeavouring to destroy our galleries, which were approaching his front line. At this time he blew up several camouflets and mines in No Man's Land, with the object, first of destroying our galleries, and second of obtaining an advantage point from which he could overlook the area between Railway Wood and Ypres. On March 5th the enemy blew up a mine (afterwards called Cotter Crater) just clear of his own front line and about 35 yards from our No. 2a Crater. The enemy immediately occupied the crater and established himself so strongly that three attacks by one of the Liverpool Battalions failed to dislodge him. On the 7th the officer in charge of the miners warned divisional H.Q. that tapping had been heard and that an enemy mine might be expected to be blown at any time at a point about 30 yards from the junction of Mud Lane and the fire trench. Division accordingly ordered a consolidating party to be formed, which should have no other duties than to remain in and about the front line ready at any moment to dash into No Man's Land and reach the new crater before the enemy, occupy the far lip and consolidate it. This entailed the formation of various sections, Lewis guns, carrying, wiring, bombing, etc. The organisation itself was good and would have worked well if the mine had gone up where it was expected. Other difficulties had also to be overcome. Lieutenant H. B. Bennett was commanding "A" Company in the front line for the first time, 50 per cent. of his men had never before been near the front line, and there were 50 men of another company in the same trench, but not under his command. Lieutenant T. S. Blakeley commanded the crater party on "A" Company's front. March 9th was an exceptionally quiet day, so much so as to arouse suspicion, and the Company "stood to" from 5.45 to 6.45 p.m. At "stand down" Lieutenant Bennett and Second Lieutenant R. Macdonald proceeded to explore a disused trench, but they had scarcely gone 20 yards when the explosion came. The ground heaved and rocked, and about 25 yards away the earth rose in huge lumps to an incredible height. Then followed a dull roar, a hissing sound, a faint flash and lastly a long column of smoke. In anticipation of a possible rush from Cotter Crater to 2a Crater a Lewis gun had been

Digitized by Google

placed at Y and a bombing post had been established at X. The Lewis gun was in charge of Lance-Corporal E. C. Nicholls, whose quickness in opening fire across the gap was truly remarkable. The artillery opened fire without waiting for our S.O.S., but naturally at the wrong point. The enemy had attempted to cross the gap covered by the Lewis gun immediately the earth subsided, but owing to the quickness of Lance-Corporal Nicholls the way was barred. Lieutenant Bennett had got in touch with the artillery, and directed their fire so as to make an effective barrage. The experience of the consolidating party was very unfortunate. Obeying their instructions to the letter, they rushed into No Man's Land, but were unable to locate the new crater, as Cotter Crater was in between. Bullets were flying about, and several of them were early casualties. Lieutenant Bennett, realising the position, ordered all back into the front line. Second Lieutenant Blakeley was already wounded, and Second Lieutenants Beatson and Macdonald took over the Lewis gun and bombing respectively. The consolidating party were reformed and made ready at the nearest point in the front line to the now located new crater. As soon as our artillery lifted off 2 and 2a Craters the party were to occupy the near lip of the new crater, which henceforth was called the Blakeley Crater. Second Lieutenant Beatson covered Cotter Crater with his Lewis gun, Second Lieutenant Macdonald covered the north side of Blakeley Crater with his bombing party, and the artillery barrage was now on the enemy front line. Then commenced furious firing between Cotter and the new crater, in course of which Second Lieutenant Beatson was wounded. By this time Lieutenant Bennett had reorganised the men in the fire trench, forming bombing, S.A.A., wire and picquets, and other carrying parties, C.S.M. Lamb (killed later in the night), and Sergeant Smallshaw rendering invaluable services. Consolidating then went on, the wiring round the new craters, 2 and 2a, being a particularly hazardous task, as the enemy was only 30 yards away, and the casualties were inevitable, Lance-Corporal Lydiate being killed. Second Lieutenant Macdonald was placed in charge of the new crater position, and it was largely owing to his coolness and resourcefulness that the later portion of the night was so successful. The new crater was about 50 yards across, and it was found impossible to cover the whole of it, as the occupation of the far

Digitized by Google

lip would have caused a large addition to the casualties, and formed a dangerous advanced post with the enemy in Cotter Crater partly in the rear. Permission was therefore given to secure the near lip only, and this was done. A heavy bomb attack came about 2.30 a.m. on the 10th, but it was successfully driven off, as was also a less determined one half an hour later. The operations of that night were considered by Division to be highly satisfactory, and it is an undoubted fact that the enemy was prevented from achieving his objective in occupying the new crater and so overlooking 2 and 2a craters. Second Lieutenant Brash, the Battalion Intelligence Officer was killed while examining the new crater, the total casualties being :—

	Officers.	N.C.O.'s and men.
Killed	1	10
Wounded	3	17
Missing	—	2

The following immediate rewards resulted :—

Second Lieutenant Macdonald	M.C.
Sergeant Hewitson	D.C.M.
Sergeant Kilbride	M.M.
Corporal Dickenson	M.M.
Lance-Corporal Ashcroft	M.M.
Lance-Corporal Nicholls	M.M.

The enemy blew a small camouflet the next night, causing no damage. Otherwise quiet, but there was much aerial activity on the 11th, two of our machines being driven down. On the 12th the Battalion was relieved by the 1/5th South Lancs. and went to the Ecole. The relief was very late owing to a Lewis gun team getting stuck in the new crater. The total casualties in this tour were four officers and 50 other ranks. The following days were spent in cleaning up and in providing working parties. The Menin Gate was heavily shelled on the evening of March 15th. On the 16th the Battalion went to the Canal Bank, preparatory to taking over a new sector at La Brique, which took place on the 17th, there being no casualties, but on the 18th Ypres neighbourhood was heavily shelled, and Sergeant Lund and Lance-Corporal Bowker were killed by shrapnel in the Orderly Room. There was much promiscuous shelling during this tour, but few other casualties, and on

Digitized by Google

March 23rd the Battalion was relieved by the South Lancs., and went back to the Canal Bank. The weather for the past week had been bright and frosty, but the 26th was cold and wet. The 1/4th King's Own relieved on the 27th, and the Battalion went to A Camp by train. On April 1st the Corps Commander distributed medals and inspected the camp. He also gave an unexpected "gas alarm," which caused some amusement. Snow fell heavily on the 3rd, and next day the Divisional General inspected the Battalion. On the 6th the Battalion went back to the Ecole, and next night relieved the 1/6th King's Liverpools in the front line at Railway Wood. Trench mortars were active and two camouflets were blown by the enemy, but otherwise it was a quiet tour, and on the 12th the South Lancs. relieved, the Battalion going back to the Ecole, except that a party of "A" Company under Second Lieutenant Honey were left in Half Moon Trench. On the 16th the Battalion was relieved by the 1/5th King's Liverpools and went to the Prison for one night. The next they were back in their old sector in Potijze Wood, and the same day the Transport moved to new stables on the main Poperinghe road at Galgestraat cross-roads. During this tour Warwick Farm was frequently shelled, and things seemed to be happening over on the right in Railway Wood. There was much aerial activity, and on the night of the 24th the enemy must have been scared, for he opened a terrific bombardment on the whole front which lasted three-quarters of an hour, causing casualties to the King's Own—two killed and four wounded. The tour lasted altogether 10 days, which was twice as long as usual, but relief came on April 27th, H.Q., "A" and "B" Companies going to O Camp and "C" and "D" Companies staying in Ypres to form permanent working parties for the Royal Engineers. Quiet and peace reigned in O Camp, and the weather had become fine and warm. There was a remarkable exhibition of flying on May 1st, as an enemy plane which had been cut off tried what in those days were considered almost impossible feats in diving to escape his pursuer, but at last it was brought down and the airman killed, to the regret of the spectators for miles round, as, though the plane was wanted, the airman had shown great pluck and skill. On the same day the Battalion, less "C" and "D," went to A Camp. On May 3rd the enemy put 3,000 shells into Ypres, so that "C" and "D" Companies were glad to be relieved by "A" and "B."

Digitized by Google

On the 7th those in A Camp marched to Z Camp behind Poperinghe, and " A " and " B " Companies followed, partly by train. Transport also moved to K Camp near by. On May 9th the Battalion should have gone to St. Omer, but the move was cancelled, and the same day a draft of 39 men arrived. On the 10th there was an inspection by the Brigadier, General F. G. Lewis, General L. Green Wilkinson having gone to England, to the general regret, and on the 13th a Brigade Church Parade. Football, concerts, etc., filled in the time, and the Battalion did not mind Z Camp as there was no war behind Poperinghe, but the 15th heralded a change, Transport moving back to the 165th Brigade lines in G.4a, and next day the Battalion followed, marched to Poperinghe, entrained for Ypres, and stayed for the night at the Ecole. On the 17th the 1/5th King's Liverpools were relieved in Railway Wood, a small mine being blown up by the enemy near Blakeley Crater the same night, but no action followed. On the 18th Second Lieutenant E. R. Simpson was wounded. The enemy artillery was active and camouflets were often blown. On the 20th Ypres was heavily shelled, but inter-company reliefs were carried out that night without casualties. There was generally much enemy activity of all kinds this tour, but few casualties. This eight days' tour terminated on May 25th, when the Battalion went to the Ecole and became the support and carrying Battalion. One man was wounded on the 27th, when the enemy peppered the Ecole with shrapnel, and on the 28th there was a gas alarm, but no gas. On the 29th our sappers blew a mine in Railway Wood, wiping out Cotter, New Crater and No. 12 Craters. The South Lancs. consolidated the near lip of the crater with two casualties. The enemy casualties must have been heavy when the mine went up. On May 31st the Battalion was relieved at the Ecole, and went to strong points at L.8 and Machine Gun Farm, H.Q. being at Burgomaster Farm. Returning working parties on June 1st experienced " tear gas " from shells falling in Ypres, and during succeeding days working parties often encountered gas shells. On June 5th the Battalion were scattered in and round Ypres. Forward H.Q. and " D " Company went to billets on the Menin Road. " A " Company remained at L.8, while "C" Company went to Dixmude Street, and " B " Company to the Convent. The Menin Road was shelled that night, and there were many casualties amongst the

Digitized by Google

Transport, but none in the King's Own. On June 9th Major J. D. Johnstone joined as Second in Command, going direct to Burgomaster Farm. The enemy again became more active on the 10th, dropping " tear " shells on the Menin Road and in Ypres. Second Lieutenant Chapman was wounded while out with a working party from L.8, and Second Lieutenant White was wounded at the Convent, and on the 12th the Menin Road was again shelled, causing casualties to the 1/10th Scottish Transport. On June 13th Lieutenant-Colonel A. B. Wayte arrived to take over the command from Lieutenant-Colonel Anderson Morshead, who went to join his Battalion, the 1st Devons, which he afterwards commanded, and made that memorable stand on March 21st, 1918, when he was last seen with the remnants of his Battalion surrounded by the enemy, but refusing to surrender, and so came to a glorious death.

On June 14th the enemy blew several camouflets in the Railway Wood Sector. He was supposed to be destroying his listening posts. " Tear " shells fell on the Menin Road and shrapnel near H.Q., where Lieutenant Boys Stones was slightly wounded at duty. On the 15th the Battalion took over the sector between Potijze and Railway Wood from the 1/9th King's Liverpools. Battalion H.Q. were in Dragoon Farm, " B " and " C " Companies in the front line, Lieutenant Binns and party at Mills Cotts, " D " Company in St. James Trench, and " A " Company at the Convent. One platoon of " C " Company, leaving Dixmude Street to go up, were caught by shells, having three killed and 10 wounded, including Second Lieutenant Gregg and Sergeant Lynch, D.C.M., killed. Dragoon Farm was heavily shelled on the 17th, but there was no direct hit. There was also shelling of the forward trenches, where Second Lieutenant Barton was wounded and one man was killed and nine wounded. German " sausages " began to be more numerous and the enemy was evidently nervous of our coming attack and wanted more observation as his planes had difficulty in crossing our lines. On the 18th there was a heavy thunderstorm. " A " Company left the Convent to take over from " C " Company in Mill Cotts. There was active shelling on the 19th, three men being killed and one wounded. There were now signs of relief, real relief, for an advance party of the 10/11th H.L.I. arrived to reconnoitre. The relief came next day, when the Battalion marched to a new tent camp called

Digitized by Google

Query Camp, not far from A Camp. The relief had been late and the camp was not reached till 5.30 next morning. Later that day cleaning up commenced, and the usual baths were enjoyed at Poperinghe. There were constant working parties, for light railways and ammunition dumps were being rapidly pushed forward for the great attack. One dump was near Query Camp and attracted enemy shells, but none fell in the camp. The C.O., Second in Command, and Company Commanders had all reconnoitred the Wieltje Sector, so it was fairly well guessed what part the King's Own should take in the coming battle. On the 27th an advance party under the Quartermaster left for St. Omer and the Quelme area, and after arranging billets at Cormette, were told the Battalion were not going there, but to Setques, where they arrived on the 28th, but Transport, which also left G.4a the same day, did not arrive till the 29th. The Battalion settled down to what turned out to be a long "rest," rest that is from the trenches, for the stay at Setques lasted till July 20th. These three weeks were spent in thorough practice of the coming attack, the Battalion gradually being trained in the new form of attack, with tanks co-operating till everything should go like clockwork. The 16th and 36th Divisions were in the neighbourhood. There were football and cricket, running and swimming, lectures and musketry, in fact everything to get the men fit. Finally Brigade Sports on July 15th, and an "attack at dawn" on July 17th, completed the training, and on July 20th the Battalion left Setques for the old camping grounds near Ypres, preceded the previous day by the Transport, who went back to G.4a.

Digitized by Google

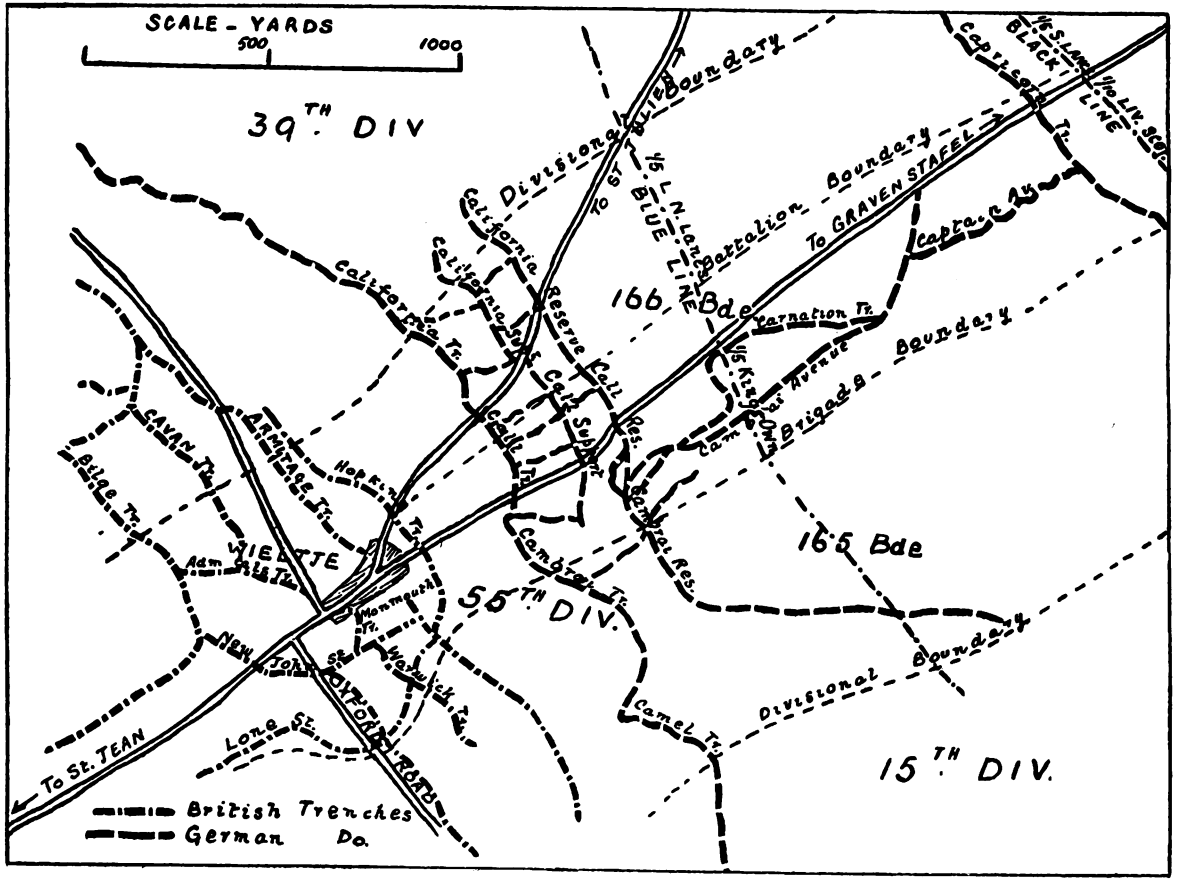
Chapter X.

July 31st, 1917.

WHEN the Battalion arrived at Poperinghe, H.Q., "A" and "B" Companies marched to Derby Camp, and "C" and "D" to P.1 Strong Point, between Vlamertinghe and Ypres. On July 22nd there was a church parade. On the morning of the 23rd "D" Company in P.1 were heavily shelled. One shell landed in the Company H.Q., killing C.Q.M.S. Harrison, Sergeant Eastwood and Private Martin, and wounding four others. As "D" Company billets were quite unsafe and there was no point in their staying, they were moved back to Derby Camp, "C" Company remaining. Officers and N.C.O.'s proceeded to 19th Corps H.Q. to view a model of the ground in the forthcoming operations, and on July 24th the Battalion took over the Wieltje Sector from the Scottish, "D" Company remaining at Derby Camp, and "A" Company occupying the front line with "B" and "C" in reserve. On July 25th the artillery spent all its energies on cutting the enemy wire, and this went on for days, the infantry going out at night to inspect and report progress. "Z" day, otherwise the day of attack, was postponed, so "A" Company was relieved by "B" Company, and retired to L.4 by the Vlamertinghe-Salvation Corner Road. This was on the night of the 26th. It was reported the following day that the enemy was retiring further north, so "A" and "D" Companies were put on short notice to move. Lieutenant Pinch, with a patrol, succeeded in getting near the enemy wire, when he was fired on and bombed. Second Lieutenant (Temporary Captain) Robertson was killed by this outburst, Second Lieutenant Pickstone was wounded, and besides these "B" Company had three men killed and six wounded during the day. There was much aerial activity on the 28th, and during the afternoon "C" Company relieved

Digitized by Google

JULY 31ST 1917



Digitized by Google

" B " in the front line. At 7 p.m. the Loyals made a raid from our front line, killing 20 of the enemy and capturing a prisoner. Captain Roper and Lieutenant Kean came up from the reserve at Transport, the former to " B " Company and the latter to " C." The 29th was " X " day, and final preparations were made. " A " and " D " Companies left their reserve positions, and the following dispositions were made :—

" A "	Company	Front Line.
" C "	,,	Oxford Trench.
" B "	,,	Warwick Trench.
" D "	,,	New Armitage Trench.
H.Q.		Wieltje Dug-out

The scheme, so far as it affected the 1/5th King's Own, was as follows :—

The 166th Brigade was to attack on the left and the 165th Brigade on the right of the Divisional front. On the 166th Brigade front were the 1/5th Loyal North Lancs. (left) and the 1/5th King's Own (right). They were to capture the first objective, the blue line (the German front line), and the 1/10th Scottish and the 1/5th South Lancs. were to pass through them and take the Black line. When these were taken the 164th Brigade was to pass through the other two Brigades and secure the Green line. Of the King's Own " A " and " B " were in the front line in two waves, and " C " and " D " behind them as the third and fourth waves. The Wieltje-Gravenstafel road divided the companies, so that " B " and " D " Companies moved on the left of it, and " A " and " C " Companies on the right. On " Y " day these dispositions were taken up, and Transport moved up to a quagmire in L.8, which later became much worse owing to the heavy rain. The day passed quietly, but at night a 5.9 dropped amongst " C " Company, killing four men. After dark the final assembly for the attack was carried out, " A " and " B " Companies moving into No Man's Land, and " C " and " D " Companies occupying the front line. All preparations were now complete.

Colonel Wayte's account : —

" At 3.45 a.m. (' Z ' day) I went upstairs (from the dug-out), and at 3.50 a.m. the mines went up and our barrage came down. The German reply was feeble and erratic. At 5 a.m. I received information that the Blue line was taken and being

Digitized by Google

consolidated, and I moved my H.Q. from Wieltje to a small Boche concrete dug-out in Call Support Trench. I then went round the line, and found the Battalion well dug in and the men in good spirits. Most of the tanks were helpless in the mud, and had not got much further than the enemy front line.

" All quiet till 3 p.m., when the Boche counter attack began on the Black line in front of us. The shelling was terrific till 6.30 p.m. At 7 p.m. I received orders to take over the Blue line, as the North Lancs. had had to go to support the Green line (round Pond Farm) which had been wiped out. The rain descended in buckets, and continued through the night. At 4 a.m. on August 1st I shifted my H.Q. to Pickelhaube Farm along with the North Lancs., and went round the lines at 6 a.m. The men were standing in two feet of water, but sticking it well. The Aid Post was swimming in water. It is 10.30 a.m. and everything is ominously quiet. I have only five officers left bar Headquarters.

" 9 p.m. The ominous quietness was broken by a terrific barrage on our right, at 2 p.m., and through my glasses I saw the division on our right returning from the Black line. I stood every man to, including H.Q., and issued more S.A.A.

" The wires to Brigade are all dished. Mercifully no attack took place on our front. I sent Major Milnes to get into touch with the Battalion on our right, which he did, and reorganised the line under heavy shell fire. (He gained the M.C. for this.)

" Everyone soaked to the skin, and the men are depressed. but sticking it grandly. At 4 a.m. (August 2nd) they shelled my H.Q. with a hurricane bombardment. One shell went right into the Aid Post, wounding Chavasse (the Doctor) and killing outright five wounded men.

" At 5 a.m. a prisoner brought in said the Boche would attack this morning. Pouring wet all night and the scene defies description at 8 a.m. After breakfast Macfarlane (Adjutant) rushed in and said that after the heavy shell fire and shivering after two nights up to the thighs in water, some of the men were showing signs of wavering. I rushed along the line and did what I could to cheer them. The line and H.Q. were shelled heavily all day, but no infantry attack followed.

" We were relieved by a Battalion of the Royal Irish Rifles at 11 p.m. The relieving C.O. (Colonel Cole Hamilton) staggered in shot through the shoulder. The shell piece had

Digitized by Google

just missed the main artery. We bound him up and he was amazingly cheerful and refused to go down. At 11 p.m. the Boche concentrated on my H.Q. with 5.9's, and we sat while the candles went out every half minute for the best part of an hour. Then came a lull, and when the relief was reported complete we did a bolt through wire and slime past two sections of poor lads wiped out with one shell, along the edge of craters, in which one man sank up to his neck and prayed to be left there to die, over barbed wire, which cut our clothes into strips; and all the while they shelled and shelled on the front and on the left and in front and behind us. Macfarlane was wounded in the back. Macdonald was amazingly cool and piloted us back to Wieltje, where we arrived more or less cooked.

" Here an incident happened which did much to revive me. Lieutenant Macdonald, who led the way, shouted ' Make way for the Colonel.' A Liverpool Scot, with withering contempt, turned and said, ' Colonel indeed! there's blank blank Generals down there!' pointing down the steps.

" Throughout the entire operations I cannot say too much in praise of all ranks of the Battalion who took and held their objective through three days of appalling shell and rifle fire, in conjunction with such discomfort that no one who has not seen Flanders has any conception of."

Lieutenant H. B. Bennett's account :—

" The German first system consisted of three lines of trenches about 100 yards apart, and it was the duty of ' A ' and ' B ' Companies to capture these lines. ' C ' and ' D ' were then to pass through ' A ' and ' B ' and dig in on the Blue line, about 400 yards beyond the German reserve line. The attack had been planned out in great detail, and everyone felt confident of success. The dress was alike for officer and man, full equipment less pack, the haversack being worn on the back and containing extra waterbottle containing milkless sugarless tea, cardigan, towel, soap, oil tin, three days' iron rations, waterproof sheet and shaving tackle. In addition every man carried 120 rounds S.A.A., three sandbags, and two Mills bombs. Seventy-five per cent. carried shovels and picks.

" The orders for Company Commanders ran into over 20 sheets of foolscap, and included details of barrages, attached Stokes mortars, and Vickers guns; liaison points, contact aeroplanes, dress and equipment, drinking water, dumps,

Digitized by Google

carrying parties, transport, rations, enemy ruses, prisoners, notice boards, traffic control in Wieltje dug-out, stragglers' posts, regimental aid posts, signal communications, and collecting posts.

"The night of July 29/30th had been spent largely in the issue of bombs, etc., to the men, and with the exception of rum and tea, there was nothing to issue on the night of the 30/31st. All the daylight the men were kept tightly packed and out of sight. An enemy plane flying low over his own front line probably did not see very much, and must have been deceived by the fact that nobody fired at him. As soon as it was dark on the 30th the whole area sprang to life. First parties were sent out into No Man's Land to complete the cutting of our own wire. Then between 10 and 11 the companies began to file out to their jumping off stations. The night was pitch dark and damp, and except for our own shelling there was no noise. Our shelling that night had a different sound, for practically no H.E. shells were issued, but only gas shells. These made a weird wailing noise as they flew through the air, and added to the strange feeling that possessed everyone.

"The Colonel called all his Company Commanders to meet him at Wieltje dug-out at midnight for final instructions and to synchronise watches.

"Captain Briggs and I had gone down to the Wieltje dug-out together, but found that regulations *re* traffic in the dug-out had come into force, and a sentry barred our way. We had therefore to use another exit which led straight into No Man's Land, and on negotiating the stairs we found ourselves in a fearful tangle of wire, bricks and shell holes. Trusting to our sense of direction we stumbled towards our companies, and by good fortune reached them. To make the exit into No Man's Land easier I had made a hole in the parapet of the front trench about the point where the ditch called Hopkins' Trench met the front line. I had mentioned this hole to the C.O. in front of the other officers, and rather unfortunately they all decided to use it. This considerably delayed our passage into No Man's Land, and we were not ready for the move forward until nearly 3 a.m. I reported all correct at 2 a.m. and took the risk of getting things ready by zero. The men of 'A' Company in getting into position had a very difficult time owing to the darkness, the wire, and the shell holes. My Company H.Q. I

Digitized by Google

had left in the front line, while I floundered round seeing if everything was all right. Looking at my watch I saw that it was 3.20 a.m. (30 minutes from zero), so I decided to represent my Company H.Q. myself, and send the runner, Private Doyle, who was with me, to bring the remainder.

"The enemy in the front line had a bad attack of nerves; and the whole night we were treated to a wonderful display of coloured lights. Several times he bombed his wire with vigour, and this form of amusement seemed very catching, as it extended on either side. About 3 a.m. our artillery ceased, and a sudden stillness fell on us all. An occasional enemy shell would come over and burst with a beastly crash in No Man's Land or just behind the front line, but otherwise there was very little noise indeed. About 3.48 a.m. some enthusiast of a machine gunner started overhead fire, and caused a brilliant display of enemy flares, and then as if one huge gun had opened to the second at 3.50 a.m. down came our barrage. So casually had some men taken their vigil in No Man's Land that several were asleep, and woke with a start when the crash came. All got on their feet and moved (one does not march, walk or run under such conditions) towards the enemy lines. It was a marvellous sight. Behind us the sky was lit up with a red glow from the flashes of the guns, and before us, barely 30 or 40 yards away, were shells bursting with remarkable accuracy on the enemy front line. Beyond this a more brilliant display of coloured flares than we had seen before, and above all the roar of the shells we could hear the 'fut' 'fut' of the machine gun barrage.

"The barrage was on the front line for six minutes, on the support line for the next four minutes, and then it lifted 100 yards every four minutes until it reached a line about 250 yards beyond the Blue line, where it halted for 40 minutes, forming a protective barrage. After that it moved on, closely followed by the Liverpool Scottish and the South Lancs. The absolute thrill of the whole thing made one feel omnipotent. We felt that no possible defence could resist such tremendous force. This feeling of power and excitement in these first few hours of the attack created in me a feeling of intense enjoyment, and I believe others were affected likewise. I remember seeing Sergeant Ball of the Signallers do a war dance near the German reserve line, throwing his 'tin' hat into the air again and again.

"Daylight had not yet arrived, and we all got very much

Digitized by Google

mixed up with one another and with other units. The difficulty was to know when one had reached the support line or the reserve line, for both had been so badly damaged by our shell fire that they were scarcely recognisable. What few Huns we did meet with caused us very little trouble, though I know some of my men bayoneted a few. When I was in what I thought was the support line, I looked back and saw my Company H.Q. coming along and all intact. Rothwell, my servant, had struggled along not only with his own kit, but with my pack. I had left the pack behind meaning to go back for it, and I was heartily glad to see it again.

"At one time, for about ten minutes, I had not a man of my Company with me except Doyle, who stuck to me like a leech. Then I found a few of 'A' Company with Second Lieutenant Sleight, and at 5.10 a.m. I sent a message to Battalion H.Q. stating the situation. I then went on to the Blue line and found parts of several companies. All the officers of 'B' Company had been hit, as also had Captains Briggs and Harriss. I therefore collected all I could find and strung them out along a line about 100 yards short of where the Blue line should have been. This spot was chosen as the ground was drier than further down the hill. The men were set digging hard, and well they did their job. As soon as some sort of trench was made the companies were reformed, 'A' Company on the right in touch with 1/6th King's Liverpools, with 'B,' 'C' and 'D' Companies on the left. About 8 a.m. an enemy plane came over the Blue line, and almost directly the Germans began to shell with 5.9's. Our trenches however were good, and we had no casualties from this shelling. About 10 a.m. it began to rain, and never ceased until long after we were relieved. At 3 p.m. Second Lieutenant Sleight was sent to take over 'B' Company, and at this time the only company officers were :—

"'A' Company	Lieutenant H. B. Bennett.
"'C' Company	Lieutenant Kean.
"'B' Company	Second Lieutenant Sleight.
"'D' Company	Second Lieutenant Lord.

"Second Lieutenant Lord was wounded on the second day, leaving three company officers for four companies.

"The tanks which took part were not altogether a success, for the majority of them stuck in the mud before the Blue line

Digitized by Google

was crossed. Two or three reached the Black line, but they never returned, and were afterwards used as strong points.

"The night was miserably wet and cold, and the trenches gradually filled with water. Daylight came as a relief, although it heralded trouble from the enemy. About mid-day on August 1st, he counter-attacked on the Black line, held by the 15th Division, but was immediately driven out. Some excitement was caused in our line by a man who was frightened out of his wits, and who rushed down the line shouting that the enemy had broken through. The night of August 1/2nd was more miserable than the last. The water was now knee deep, and very little could be done to keep the water out. An issue of rum in the early hours of the 2nd worked wonders, and the men, who had been thoroughly miserable, wet, cold, and shivering, became as cheery as possible.

"The good news came that we were to be relieved, and at 2 a.m. on the morning of the 3rd, the 8th Royal Irish Rifles, of the 16th (Ulster) Division, came in, and a fine looking lot of fellows they were."

Lieutenant Elwood's (Medical Officer) account :—

"July 31st. 'Z' day arrived, got over the three lines of trenches quite easily and dug ourselves into the imaginary Blue line—made dressing station in a cow shed well protected until a tank stuck in the mud opposite—had to leave owing to heavy shelling.

"Went out after a Sergeant and, ably followed by Sergeant Clarkson, put him on a hurdle—too heavy—Chevasse of the Liverpool Scots and a stretcher bearer damned decently came out and gave us a hand. Chevasse hit on the head on going down the steps to his dressing station.

"August 1st. Two batteries placed behind aid post. Shelled out. Joined Chevasse, and Fawcett of the North Lancs., in a 'pillbox.' Heavy shelling. Brought stretcher bearers up with me to the trench and just got them filed out when 4.2 burst inside. Poor Chevasse, badly hit, hopeless. Three killed in trench, half a dozen wounded. Went back to aid post—blood inches deep on the floor—all seven killed. Chevasse had moved to my seat. Finished night dressing! dressing!! dressing!!!

"August 2nd. Still pouring. Trenches knee deep in

Digitized by Google

water—'D' Company's part blown in—five killed, seven wounded by one shell. Kean top-hole, brought the men out to help me with the stretchers. Clarkson and I had to dump one in shell hole after 300 yards carry. Later Macdonald and I went out and retrieved him. (Corporal) Mawson a host in himself.

"August 3rd. Relief to-night. Thank God! Went down with Macfarlane (Adjutant)—dragged out of the mud three times. Shell burst seven yards in front. Mac. hit. Pulled him along, and luck still held till out of danger."

A more general account will now be given of this operation.

The officers taking part were:—

Headquarters:—

Lieut.-Col. A. B. Wayte	Commanding Officer.
Capt. G. C. Milnes	Second in Command.
Lieut. W. S. Macfarlane	Adjutant.
Lieut. H. Boys Stone	Assistant Adjutant.
Sec. Lieut. R. Macdonald	Intelligence Officer.
Lieut. F. B. Elwood	Medical Officer.

"A" Company.—Lieut. H. B. Bennett, Sec. Lieut. W. Walker, Sec. Lieut. E. W. Sleight.

"B" Company.—Capt. T. C. Owtram, M.C., Capt. W. E. Roper, Sec. Lieut. Pinch.

"C" Company.—Capt. W. N. Briggs, Lieut. Kean, Sec. Lieut. Mackey.

"D" Company.—Captain W. Harriss, M.C., Sec. Lieut. H. Parker, Sec. Lieut. G. H. Lord.

O.C. Moppers Up.—Capt. Simpson.

O.C. Brigade Carrying Party.—Sec. Lieut. Binns.

Captain Roper had only recently rejoined the Battalion after the training for this special attack was completed. "A" Company reached their objective with few casualties, Second Lieutenant Walker being the only officer wounded. "B" Company met with more resistance, losing all their officers, Captain Roper and Second Lieutenant Pinch being killed and Captain Owtram wounded.

"C" and "D" Companies passed through to their

Digitized by Google

objectives with little resistance except from a machine gun at Rat Farm, which was engaged by Captain Briggs and two Lewis gun teams. Second Lieutenants Parker and Mackey were wounded, and Captain Simpson was killed just before reaching the German front line. Later Captains Briggs and Harriss were wounded, and Second Lieutenant Sleight assumed command of " B " Company. Battalion H.Q. moved forward to the German front line, and a Battalion Forward Command Post was established in Cambrai Support.

The other battalions of the Brigade passed through, and were successful in reaching their objective. In the evening the Loyal North Lancs. were sent forward to reinforce the Scottish, the King's Own taking over the whole of the Blue line on the Brigade front. During the afternoon, the brigaded pack animals took R.E. material, bombs, etc., beyond the German front line. August 1st Z plus one day was very wet. About 4.30 a.m. Battalion H.Q. moved forward to dug-outs in Call Reserve, C.23c 7.7 Z plus two day's rations were taken by pack animals during the afternoon from St. Jean to the late No Man's Land, being taken from there to the Brigade Carrying Party with great difficulty, owing to the great depth of mud. August 2nd was another wet day. By this time the men were standing up to their knees in mud and water, and the trenches were continually falling in. The troops were pretty well played out when in the early morning the Blue line and the new Battalion H.Q. were heavily shelled. Second Lieutenant Lord was seriously wounded, and " D " Company was temporarily under the command of Lance-Corporals Large and Fisher. Sergeant Butterworth of " C " Company was sent to take over command but was killed within half an hour of his arrival. From this time " D " Company was attached to " C " Company. In the evening the Battalion was relieved by the 15th Royal Irish Rifles, and moved back to the old Battalion front line. During this relief the Adjutant, Second Lieutenant W. S. Macfarlane, was wounded. The rain continued on August 3rd. During the day search parties brought in the bodies of the dead officers and buried some of the men, and at 9.30 p.m. the Battalion was relieved by two companies of the 14th Royal Irish Rifles, relief being completed by 1.15 a.m. on August 4th, when the Battalion marched to the Asylum and entrained for bivouacs in H.10d.

Digitized by Google

The total casualties were :—

	Killed.	Wounded	Missing.	Total.
Officers ...	4	10	—	14
Sergeants ...	1	12	—	13
Corporals ...	4	6	—	10
Lance-Corporals	4	18	1	23
Privates ...	22	136	7	165
	35	182	8	225

August 4th was again wet and blustery. The Battalion entrained at Vlamertinghe for Poperinghe and marched to Clyde Camp in L.9b. Transport also moved to Clyde Camp. August 5th opened bright and warm, and the men got a much needed cleaning up. The C.O. went on leave. Major Johnstone took command with Captain Milnes Second in Command. On the 6th the transport left for La Panne, and on the same day the Battalion marched to Abeele, entrained at 9 p.m. for Audruicq, and left there at 5 a.m. on the 7th by motor lorry to La Panne. A draft of 75 men arrived on the 8th under Lieutenant H. R. Hart, and the Transport arrived the same day. The Companies were re-organised with the following Company Commanders :—

"A" Company Lieutenant H. B. Bennett.
"B" Company Captain G. C. Milnes.
"C" Company Lieutenant J. H. Kean.
"D" Company Second Lieutenant C. E. Binns.

The Brigade was inspected near Nordausques by Major-General H. S. Jendwine, who thanked the Brigade for the magnificent part they had played in the Third Battle of Ypres. A draft of 29 men arrived on this day, the 8th. On the 9th Captain E. Atkinson returned from duty as Area Commandant, Bollezeele, and was placed in command of "D" Company. On the 11th another draft of 33 men joined along with Captain Seward, who took command of "C" Company. On the 12th Lieutenant Boys Stones went to hospital and Lieutenant H. R. Hart became Adjutant. Six more officers joined on the 18th, and a draft of 45 men on the 20th.

Reorganisation still went on, baths were enjoyed at Tournehem, and games, sports, route marches, company

Digitized by Google

parades, rifle shooting, etc., were the order of the day. On the 24th there was a most enjoyable impromptu concert in the grounds of the H.Q. Mess, and on the 25th the following awards of military medals were announced for the recent operations :—

"*A*" *Company*.—Sergeant G. E. Campbell, Lance-Corporal F. Hartley, Lance-Corporal G. Carradice, Lance-Corporal A. E. Smallshaw, Private G. Walters, Private I. Phillipson.

"*B*" *Company*.—Sergeant S. Taylor, Corporal A. Parkinson, Corporal H. J. Large, Private J. Knaggs, Private C. Taylor.

"*C*" *Company*.—Corporal W. Fisher, Private W. Buckley, Private G. Ayling.

"*B*" *Company* (*attached T.M.B.*).—Private J. Bettany.

Later announcements were :—

Bar to M.C.	Second Lieutenant R. Macdonald, M.C.
M.C.	Capt. G. C. Milnes, Sec. Lieut. G. H. Lord.
D.C.M.	Sergeant J. F. Macdonald.
M.M.	Sergeant F. W. Ball.

During the week beginning August 27th a Brigade tactical scheme had to be abandoned several times owing to the almost continuous rain, but it took place at last on August 30th, the Divisional and Corps Commanders being present. The scheme was to devise some method of dealing with the new German defence in shell holes and "pillboxes."

The rifle competitions concluded on September 2nd, when the Battalion carried off three cups. Again the Battalion came off best at the Divisional Horse Show on September 6th, when the Transport won the Major-General's Cup for most points. Rain spoiled the jumping at the end.

On September 15th there was a Divisional Tactical Scheme, the 1/5th King's Own being attached to the 164th Brigade. The Commander-in-Chief and the Army Commander were present, and were well pleased with the show.

Digitized by Google

Chapter XI.

September 20th, 1917.

ON Wednesday, September 12th, the long period of rest and training came to an end. Part of the Transport moved back by road to Ypres, and the Battalion marched to Audruicq, where there was delay in entraining. The Battalion detrained at the camping ground near Goldfish Chateau, and the Transport, which had arrived shortly before, encamped in an adjoining field. On September 14th the Battalion took over trenches in the old British front line between Potijze and Wieltje. The 15th was fine and warm and nothing happened to the Battalion, but as the stores and cookers were being moved from the vicinity of Goldfish Chateau, hostile planes dropped bombs, killing one cook, wounding three others (two of whom afterwards died) and wounding two storemen. Transport had previously moved to Vlamertinghe Brickfields and so escaped. The 16th and 17th were quiet. Lieutenant Forshaw was commended for his work in charge of a carrying party of 100 men, who took 200 gas projectors forward. Battalion returned to the Goldfish bivouacs on the 17th, and on the 18th some shrapnel and one H.E. wounded five men. On Wednesday, the 19th, the Battalion left camp under Major J. D. Johnstone, and were in position in Call Reserve by 1.45 a.m. on the 20th, the day of the Division's second attack in this battle, which began on July 31st, and later became more familiarly known as the attack on Passchendale.

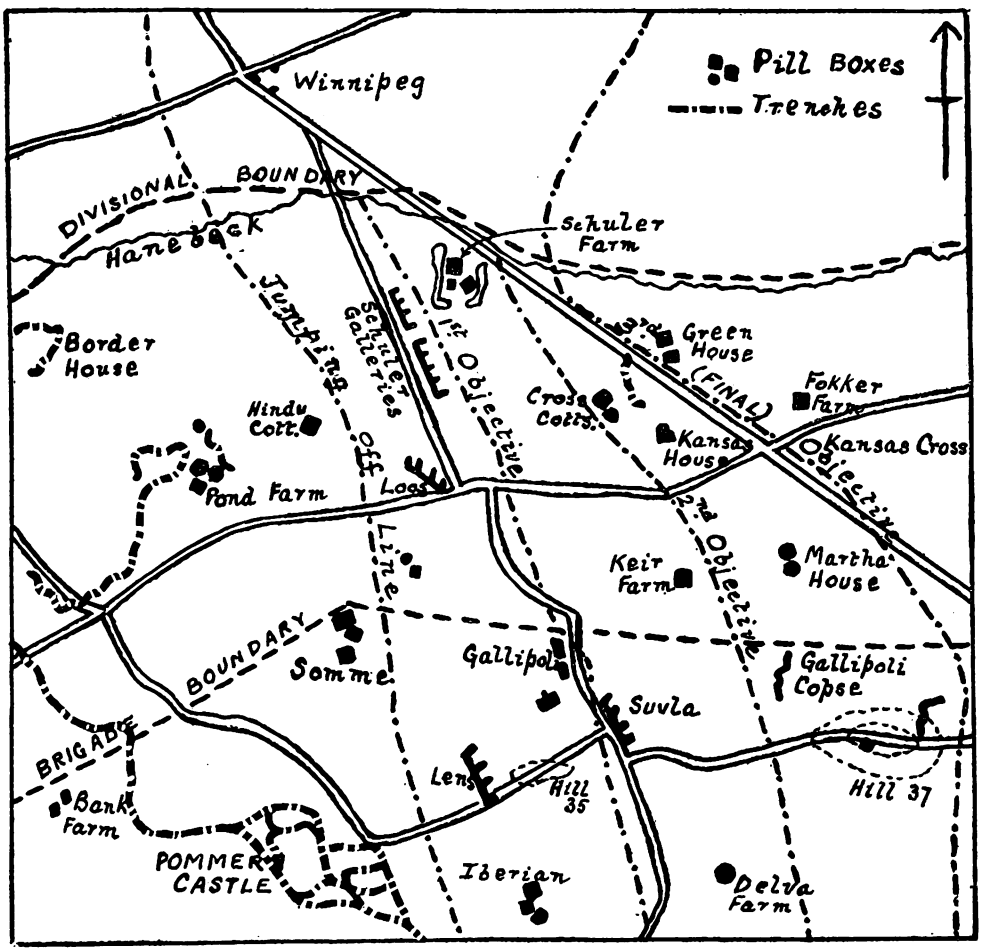
There are naturally many new names amongst the officers who took part :—

Headquarters :—

Major J. D. Johnstone	Commanding Officer.
Capt. G. C. Milnes, M.C.	Second in Command.
Capt. H. R. Hart	Adjutant.
Sec. Lieut. Sleight	Intlgnce. Officer (wounded).
Lieut. Elwood	Medical Officer.

Digitized by Google

SEPT. 20TH 1917.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

" A " Company.—Capt. H. B. Bennett, Sec. Lieut. H. Gregson (wounded), Sec. Lieut. K. L. Toovey, Sec. Lieut. A. H. Turner.

" B " Company.—Sec. Lieut. F. Sutherland (wounded), Sec. Lieut. E. Major, Sec. Lieut. A. Duxbury.

" C " Company.—Capt. J. H. Kean, Sec. Lieut. G. Haywood (wounded), Sec. Lieut. E. Dolby.

" D " Company.—Sec. Lieut. W. H. Metcalfe, Sec. Lieut. E. Lambert, Sec. Lieut. J. W. Farrand.

Brigade Carrying Party.—Lieut. H. P. Forshaw.

The area between Call Reserve and the new British front line was crossed by the Steenbeek, and it was along this stream that the enemy used to drop his barrage. By 7 a.m. this area was safely crossed with remarkably few casualties. The Battalion advanced in artillery formation of sections. The orders were to occupy the front line vacated by the 164th Brigade. " A," " C " and " D " Companies arrived, but " B " Company was missing. H.Q. had arrived at Pond Farm and received a report from O.C. " A " Company that a patrol back from the Lancs. Fusiliers front stated that the latter had no officers left, but that an officer of the 1/8th Liverpool Irish had taken command, that Schuler Galleries were captured and the Fusiliers were moving on. The C.O. reported from advanced Brigade H.Q. that the enemy was massing and that our artillery was heavily bombarding them. At this point Captain Bennett handed over " A " Company to his second in command and himself took command of " A," " C " and " D " Companies, moved to the Red Dotted line and later held the Yellow line with 100 mixed troops. His H.Q., comprising himself and three runners, were established at the north end of the Schuler Galleries. The ground between this point and the Pond Farm was pitted with shell holes and covered by numerous enemy snipers, so that a journey across this space consisted of dodging from shell hole to shell hole. The difficulty of locating troops was therefore evident, and it is a fact that though each of Captain Bennett's runners went out in turn in daylight on September 20th they were unable to find " A " or " D " Companies. There was much confusion

Digitized by Google

amongst the troops round Schuler Galleries. There were men of every unit in the 164th Brigade, some machine gunners, some R.E. and some of a battalion of the 165th Brigade. The only officer was an R.E. officer, and there were no N.C.O.'s above the rank of Corporal. By dint of strong language, and frequent visits, some semblance of order was obtained, and by getting the men together under their own unit N.C.O.'s, things began to work well. Of his own command, Captain Bennett had only located "C" Company, though it afterwards appeared that "D" Company were on the right and "A" Company on the left of the Schuler Galleries. Mixed troops were constantly arriving at the Galleries, including some officers, and later Lieutenant-Colonel Heath of the Liverpool Irish took over part of the line north of the Galleries to the Hannebeek. Things were quiet on the night of the 20th, and the morning of the 21st showed that the position held by Captain Bennett had now become the front line, the forward troops having gradually fallen back. An order came to take Schuler Farm, and a capital advance by the Liverpool Irish would undoubtedly have overcome any opposition, but on arrival they only found a stretcher bearer of the 1/5th King's Own attending to two wounded men. He had passed Schuler Galleries and found this dug-out in the Farm, and thinking he was behind the Galleries, set about attending to them.

Exciting rumours spread that the enemy were attacking, and "A" Company, who were in the rear of the Liverpool Irish, under command of Sergeant Peel at the time, immediately went forward to reinforce the front line, this to their credit, without orders and without an officer. On the commencement of the attack an S.O.S. had been sent up, and our artillery put down a most wonderful barrage. An artillery officer afterwards stated that the 55th Divisional Artillery set to work with such a will that they had far exceeded the number of rounds which regulations had fixed per minute for an 18-pounder. In some places the enemy never attempted to advance, and in others he was wiped out of existence. H.Q. in Pond Farm, who had earlier in the day been warned for relief, seeing the S.O.S., moved up bodily to reinforce, sending the office papers back to Brigade, but happily our artillery had broken the attack. At 9.20 p.m. as all had quietened down, H.Q. left the front line and returned to their own position. At 1.30 a.m. the Adjutant

Digitized by Google

reported the relief complete and the Battalion came back to huts at Vlamertinghe Area No. 2, but owing to the various mishaps three companies did not arrive till 6 a.m.

The following short account of this action by Lieutenant Elwood (Medical Officer) is of interest :—

" September 19th. Going up to-night with Major Johnstone to California Reserve—bedding with Milnes—wet, tired, but no shelling.

" September 20th. Started off two hours after initial barrage for Pond Galleries before H.Q. moved. Took the road past Rat Farm as shells were just missing it. Got S.B.'s up safely. Spent night getting in wounded.

" September 21st. Sent out (Corporal) Mawson for (Second Lieutenant) Sutherland, who is hit through the lungs—searched No Man's Land—got 20 in one shell hole—brought them all back—hell of a night. Clarkson good, Mawson plethoric. Dressing a Scottie, bowled over by a burst, the padre of the next Battalion hit on shoulder while steadying the splint for me. Sent padre down. Spent night looking for wounded. Sleight hit badly—he'll lose his leg.

" September 22nd. Went round the line—sniped at but luck good. Brought in three King's Own and gave neighbouring M.O. list of 11 of his men brought in. Heard Bennett was counter attacked, so took 25 men and all S.B.'s armed. Major Johnstone gone on ahead to Schuler Galleries. Relieved and walked to Vlamertinghe."

The total casualties in this attack were :—

	Killed.	Wounded.	Missing.	Total.
Officers	—	4	—	4
C.S.M.'s	1	1	—	2
Sergeants	1	5	—	6
Corporals... ...	—	4	1	5
Lance-Corporals..	1	3	—	4
Privates	14	54	5	73
	17	71	6	94

Digitized by Google

At 3 p.m. the same day, September 22nd, the Battalion moved to Derby Camp, and the following day marched to Shrine Camp near Watou. The Transport moved independently to the same camp. On the 24th the Colonel and the Brigadier-General Commanding congratulated the Battalion on its good work. Six officers and 66 men joined during the day, and a small advance party left for Beaulencourt, near Bapaume.

Digitized by Google

Chapter XII.

CAMBRAI.

October-November, 1917.

THE Battalion entrained at Proven on September 25th and detrained at Miraumont at 2.30 the following morning, from there marching to Beaulencourt, which was reached at 9 a.m. The country round was of course desolate, but the huts were good. The few days spent here were taken up with refitting and reorganisation, and many who had been on the Somme in 1916 took the opportunity to look over the old battlefield. Several officers rode through Le Transloy, Lesboefs, Guinchy, Guillemont, Delville Wood, Longueval, Flers, and Geudecourt, back to Beaulencourt by Death Valley—the whole series of villages very like Nineveh—a mass of bricks showing where a house stood, or a cradle or chair pointing to someone's habitation. Such a scene of desolation! And the only birds seen were typical—two ravens! Everywhere the little crosses "To an unknown soldier." Passes were also given to a few to go to Amiens. The Colonel and other officers left on the 29th to reconnoitre trenches to be taken over in front of Epehy, and the Battalion marched later in the day to Aizecourt-le-Bas. The camp here consisted of tents, but the weather still continued fairly warm. On Sunday, the 30th, the Battalion relieved the 16th Cheshires, having tea en route at Villers Faucon. Relief was complete at 9.30 p.m. Dispositions :—

"C" and "D" Companies	Birdcage.
"A" Company (two platoons)	Heythrop Post.
"A" Company (two platoons)	Cruciform.
"B" Company	In reserve at Priel Bank.
H.Q.	The Nest.

The Transport moved the same day to lines near Villers Faucon and took rations to the Nest and Priel Bank. Things

Digitized by Google

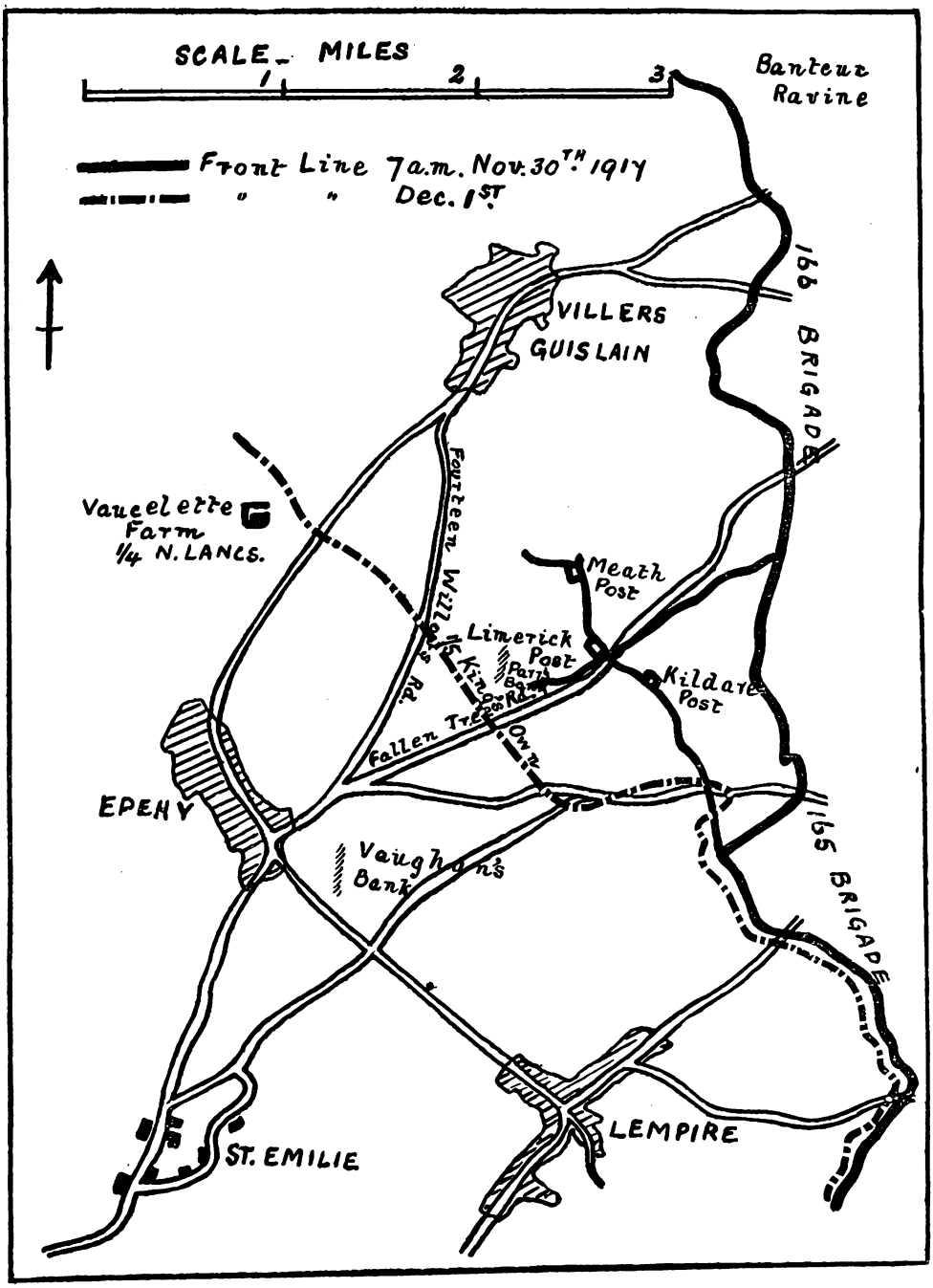
were very quiet here, and wiring and trench improvements went on uninterrupted, there being little else to report.

The Birdcage had a history. Some Warwicks had been holding the line which ran from the Birdcage north across No Man's Land to what was in September, 1917, the German front line at Tino Trench. The enemy had attacked and for the most part forced back the Warwicks, but one company held on to the Birdcage, and in spite of all the efforts of the enemy they continued to hold out. Although the Birdcage formed a most extraordinary and dangerous salient in our lines, it was held for some time for sentimental reasons. Later a portion was given up, and the front was brought back to Seed Trench. When the King's Own took over the Birdcage the place was uncannily quiet, forming a strong contrast to Ypres. Our patrols were small, and the enemy seemed to have the run of No Man's Land. However one night one of his large patrols was caught by our Lewis guns and a trench mortar. This began a trench mortar duel, and as the Birdcage was in between it became a most unhealthy spot. Ossus Wood was also a source of anxiety, as it projected from the German lines into No Man's Land and provided an easy jumping off ground for their raiding parties. This necessitated patrols, and many men will remember the experience of sliding through Ossus Wood.

Transport moved on the 7th to new lines, which required making, north of the lines vacated, but about the same distance from Villers Faucon. The Quartermaster's Stores remained on the old ground, as there was no accommodation as yet in the new lines. On October 8th Captain W. R. W. Deed rejoined, and became temporarily Second in Command. The weather had now broken, and there was much wind and rain. On the 9th Captain Milnes proceeded to England on six months' leave, and on the 12th the Battalion was relieved and went to tents at Aizecourt-le-Bas. The Quartermaster's Stores also moved, part to the Battalion and part to the Transport lines. The camping ground was so bad that the Battalion moved next day to the Brigade Camp near by, taking the tents with them. The usual training was carried out, and fatigue parties were provided for the making of the new Transport lines. Baths were provided at Tincourt, and as the weather improved football again came into vogue. There was another addition of six officers, and a visit by an American Divisional General. The rest came to an

Digitized by Google

NOV. 30TH 1917.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

end on October 22nd, when the Battalion returned to the line, having tea on the way at Villers Faucon. This time the Battalion took over strong points in front of Epehy.

" A " Company	Kildare Post.
" C " Company	Meath Post.
" B " Company	Vaughan's Bank.
" D " Company	14 Willows Road
H.Q.	Vaughan's Bank.

" D " Company moved next day to Limerick Post, and as the Brigadier went on leave, Colonel Wayte took over temporary command of the Brigade, and Captain Deed then commanded the King's Own. Nothing much of interest occurred during this tour, except that the Corps, Divisional, and Brigade Commanders visited all the strong points. On the 29th the Battalion was relieved by the 1/5th South Lancs., and went to relieve the 7th Somerset Light Infantry in a new Sector in front of Villers Guislain, H.Q. being in High Street. This was again an uneventful tour, except that occasionally Villers Guislain was shelled. On November 14th four M.C.'s were announced for operations on September 20th :—

Captains H. B. Bennett and H. P. Forshaw, Second Lieutenant W. H. Metcalfe, and R.S.M. Pobgee.

As opportunity offered on the 7th the men had baths at Villers Guislain, which was being shelled at the time. Second Lieutenant T. S. Blakeley was appointed Assistant Adjutant, and Captain A. N. Hargreaves, who had rejoined from the Trench Mortar Battery, was posted as Second in Command to " A " Company. Our artillery became more active, but there was little reply from the enemy. On the 15th there was an inter-company relief, the disposition then being :—

" D " Company	Left front.
" B " Company	High Street.
" C " Company	Right front.
" A " Company	George support.

The front line companies were holding nearly three-quarters of a mile each, and consequently posts were few and far between. The right front company was on the forward slope of a hill, and overlooked Honnecourt Wood and Village. The village of La Terriere, with the Hindenburg Line just west

Digitized by Google

of it, two and a half miles away, could be seen at the top of the hill opposite. Any amount of movement was seen, but very little of it was within range of our 18-pounders and 4.5's. Honnecourt Wood, however, provided a certain amount of interest, as the enemy were often seen entering and leaving a dug-out. It was presumed to be an officers' dug-out, as men were seen carrying plates and once a teapot.

The companies in support provided carrying parties to the front line, and also provided patrols. No Man's Land was extensive, the nearest enemy posts, those on Fife Road and High Street, being about 600 yards away, but if a patrol left our end of the Fife Road and struck off in a north-easterly direction, they could wander nearly 1,500 yards before they found any enemy posts or wire.

On the 17th " C " Company were relieved by a company of the South Lancs. and went to Mac Trench in immediate support to the front line. Next day Battalion H.Q. moved up to Denning Avenue to make room for the 35th Brigade H.Q. The enemy artillery was active on the 19th, but our own was quiet, and there was nothing to indicate that we were about to launch a powerful and sudden attack.

As the King's Own held the line immediately to the right of where the attack was launched, the men had an excellent view of the whole operation. Zero was fixed for 6.20 a.m. on November 20th, and the secret had been so well kept that the men in the front line only knew of it shortly before zero. The night had been extraordinarily quiet, and save for a few low unusual noises, which we recognised as tanks, the night passed without any alarm being given the enemy. At zero the whole area was suddenly changed into a fierce storm of shell fire. The trenches in Banteux Spur were completely enveloped in a mass of bursting H.E. and smoke shells. Our own trenches sprang to life, and the tanks, which had crept up to a few yards behind the front line, crossed the trench and gently moved across No Man's Land. The infantry followed the tanks, stopped when they stopped, and moved on when they moved. The enemy wire and defence crumpled up before this sudden and unexpected attack, and the tanks and the infantry had the time of their lives. The enemy artillery retaliated on our line, causing no casualties, but the Adjutant, Captain Hart, was wounded whilst observing the advance. The battle to the north

Digitized by Google

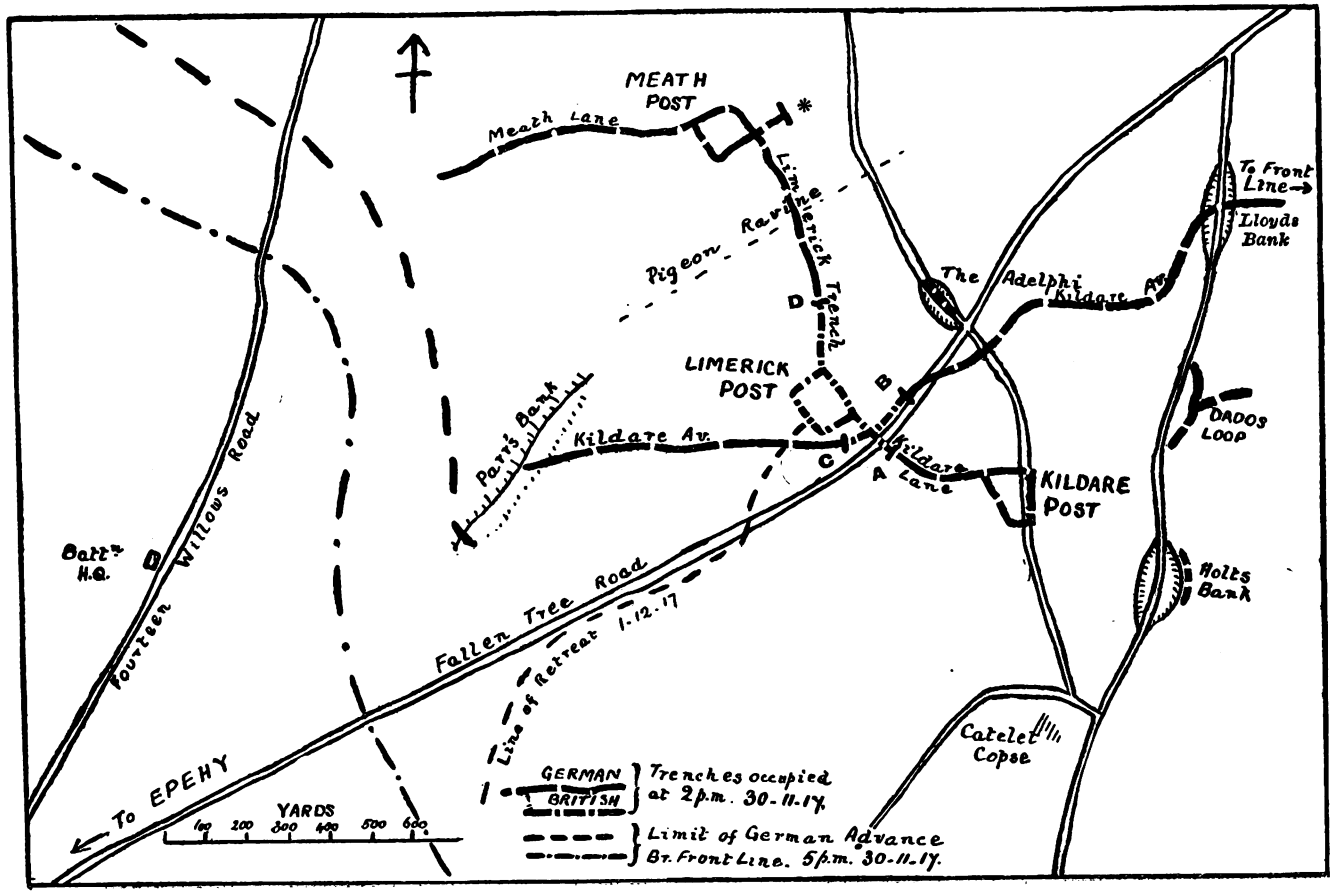
continued, but had little effect on the King's Own front, except that the enemy artillery was more active. On Thursday, November 22nd, " A " and " B " Companies changed places in the front line, " B " Company now being on the left. On Sunday, the 25th, the Battalion was relieved by the 1/5th South Lancs., " B " Company, however, being attached to them and remaining in reserve in High Street. Two platoons of " A " Company went to Sherwood Lane and two platoons went to 14 Willows Road. " C " Company took over Meath Post, and " D " Company and H.Q. went to 14 Willows Road. On the same day Lieutenant-Colonel Wayte went on leave, and Major Anderson of the 1/5th Loyal North Lancs. took over command. The 26th was a quiet day. " A " Company took over Limerick Post on the 27th, and on the 28th half of " B " Company went to Vaucellette Farm, but moved again next day to Vaughan's Bank. Two platoons of " B " Company remained attached to the 1/5th South Lancs., and these were captured along with the whole of the South Lancs. on November 30th. The 29th was quiet, but unusual activity was observed in the enemy back areas. About 7 a.m. on Friday, November 30th, the enemy started heavy counter battery work, and at the same time bombarded the Divisional front and to the north. " Stand to " was ordered, and half of " B " Company and two platoons of the 1/10th Scottish at Vaughan's Bank were moved to 14 Willows Road. The situation had become quieter, but about 8.30 a.m. a large party of artillerymen came down Le Petit Sant ravine and reported that the enemy had passed our front line and was advancing over the Villers Ridge. It was also stated from another source that the enemy were advancing along Gloucester Road. The situation appeared serious, so all available H.Q. details and the two platoons of " B " Company were pushed up the valley to form a defensive line. " D " Company, under Lieutenant Metcalfe, was ordered to take a similar position on the right of the Willows Road, and at the same time all available men were ordered forward from the Transport lines. About 9 a.m. several hundred of the enemy appeared over the ridge south of Villers Guislain and proceeded to dig in above Leith Walk. A report was received from Captain H. B. Bennett, M.C., that Meath and Limerick Posts were hotly engaged, and that the 1/10th Liverpool Scottish had been driven back. About 10 a.m. Captain Bennett was slightly

Digitized by Google

wounded, head and hand, and came back to Battalion H.Q. and reported Kildare Post taken. He then returned to his Company. The Battalion was reinforced by the 1/4th King's Own, and immediately afterwards it was reported that Meath and Limerick Posts were surrounded, and that the enemy was holding Parr's Bank in considerable strength. Lieutenant-Colonel Macdonald of the 1/10th Liverpool Scottish, with 100 men, arrived at this time and reported that they had fought their way through from Kildare Post. The situation remained very obscure until 10 p.m., when Privates Marland and Baxendale of "A" Company, who had broken through from Limerick Post, brought a report from Captain Bennett that "C" Company had evacuated Meath Post, and that the survivors of "A" and "C" Companies and some of the Liverpool Scottish, under Captain Roddick, were still holding out in Limerick Post. These two runners, along with four men of "D" Company, went back with an order to Captain Bennett to fight his way out, but the party ran into some Boche in Kildare Lane, four being wounded and taken prisoners. An order was received from Brigade to reinforce Limerick Post, and Second Lieutenant Metcalfe set off with "D" Company, but met such strong M.G. fire from Parr's Bank when 500 yards short of their objective that they were compelled to withdraw. About 5 a.m. on December 1st M.G. fire was heard from Parr's Bank, and shortly afterwards Captain Bennett with "A" Company, Captain Kean with "C" Company and Captain Roddick with the 1/10th Liverpool Scottish arrived with a total of 120 men, and reported that they had got through with little resistance, the enemy being taken by surprise. At 12.30 p.m. orders were received that the 1/5th King's Own and the Transport details should attempt to take and hold Meath, Limerick and Kildare Posts. Zero 1 p.m. Dispositions, "A" and "C" Companies to Limerick Post, "D" to Kildare, and "B" to Meath, while two squadrons of Central India Horse and Transport details under Captain Hargreaves were to assist in the capture of Kildare Post and clear up Parr's Bank. The attack was launched at 1 p.m. with a very feeble barrage, but it broke down in every direction from the heavy M.G. fire, and the remnants returned to their former positions, leaving the enemy in possession of all his posts and with 50 per cent. of the attacking parties casualties. Darkness fell without further

Digitized by Google

LIMERICK POST.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

action, and the much-depleted Battalion was relieved by two companies of the Leinsters, and went to billets in the Longavesnes Aerodrome, arriving about 4 a.m. on the 2nd.

The defence of Limerick Post was referred to in Sir Douglas Haig's dispatch as follows :—

" South of the village (Villers Guislain) a single strong point known as Limerick Post, garrisoned by troops of the 1/5th Battalion (King's Own) Royal Lancaster Regiment and the 1/10th Liverpool Regiment, held out with great gallantry throughout the day, though heavily attacked."

Captain Bennett's own account should be of interest :—

" I had received no warning of any attack or operation of any kind, and would have been totally surprised if I had not, the previous night, accidentally opened a letter addressed to O.C. Meath Post from the Liverpool Scottish, to which he was attached, ordering him ' to make all his men wear their boots that night as a good deal of movement had been seen behind the enemy line.'

" November 30th was the 39th day in the trench area, and to help us to endure that long period, the officers had ordered up their valises and at night slept in pyjamas, all except the officers on duty. The men were also allowed to take off their boots at night. I awoke at a quarter to seven and found some heavy shelling on the front line. Five minutes later our S.O.S. went up. I hurriedly dressed, and going out found a heavy cloud of smoke on the front line. The wind was blowing from the south-west, and there was a strong smell of mustard gas which made our eyes water. This smell led me to suppose that there was an attack down south. I sent a message to the Liverpool Scottish H.Q. in the Adelphi, inquiring for information. They could give none, except that their front had been attacked. Kildare Post also knew nothing. The enemy had put down a creeping barrage, and this passed over us, one shell only doing harm, Sergeants Dickenson and Wilkinson and three men being killed.

" About 8 a.m. large numbers of men in extended order were seen advancing over the ridge north of Pigeon Quarry. The smoke was still thick, and it was impossible to see who they were, but we assumed they were the enemy from the direction they were taking.

" At 8.20 a.m. the Liverpool Scottish H.Q. lined the bank

Digitized by Google

in front of the Adelphi and suffered some casualties there. About 10 minutes afterwards we saw some men in field grey dash across Fallen Tree Road and drop into the trench leading into Limerick Post. These were preceded by a small party of the garrison of Kildare Post (Liverpool Scottish), and one officer. Second Lieutenant J. Henderson of 'A' Company, being on the spot, immediately took charge of the situation, and gathering a few men, he bombed the Hun right out and cleared him some way down Kildare Lane. The Scottish from Kildare Post then established a bombing block about 10 yards from Fallen Tree Road on the south side.

"In this small operation the King's Own had no casualties, but the enemy had several.

"At 9 a.m. two platoons of 'C' Company from Meath Post moved forward to the Adelphi and formed a line from there to Pigeon Ravine. Shortly afterwards the enemy advanced from Pigeon Quarry and attacked Meath Post, but were unable to reach it owing to Lewis gun fire from Meath and Limerick Posts. The enemy however occupied a small trench in front of Meath Post (marked * on the sketch). I had watched through my glasses the advance of some Huns, and was interested to notice the methods employed by the officer in command. The men rushed forward and dropped in true 'infantry training' style, but when he wanted them to go on again, he uplifted a whip or cat-o'-nine-tails, which he was carrying in his right hand, and laid about his men with great energy. The men, instead of showing resentment, jumped up and dashed forward another 50 yards. They were under fire from the Adelphi, hence their reluctance.

"At 9.45 a.m. the Liverpool Scottish and the two King's Own platoons of 'C' Company, whose right flank had been threatened by the enemy in Kildare Post and left flank by the enemy in front of Meath Post, evacuated the Adelphi and retired on Limerick Post. Half an hour later the enemy occupied the Adelphi, and we had a little snap-shooting at him. At 10.30 a.m., as I had been hit twice, once on the finger and once on the head, neither of them bad, I decided to slip down to Battalion H.Q., report the situation, and have my wounds dressed. I asked for S.A.A. and bombs and also for artillery support, but the supply of the last named was extremely doubtful. On arriving back at Limerick Post I found little had

Digitized by Google

happened, except that another bombing block had been formed in Kildare Avenue on the Adelphi side.

"Our line, which had been held by the South Lancs. and North Lancs., had been completely broken by 8 a.m., and much movement had been seen on Villers Ridge. When I returned from Battalion H.Q. I found I had an extraordinary view of the enemy activity. He was very active in Pigeon Quarry and along Sherwood Lane, a road which ran from Pigeon Quarry to Villers Guislain. Guns, wagons, limbers, mounted men and small bodies of infantry continued for some time, but the range was 1,500 yards, and as our fire did not seem to have much effect, I ordered it to cease, as we could not afford to waste ammunition.

"About 12.45 p.m. a new brigade of infantry appeared on Villers Ridge, north of Pigeon Quarry, moving in extended order. Their direction was towards Villers Guislain, but the left wing touched Meath Post. About 1.30 p.m. I saw Meath Post was in danger and sent 20 men to reinforce it, at the same time placing a block in Limerick Lane in case of accidents. (D on sketch.) At 1.45 p.m. Meath Post was heavily attacked and taken, a few men with Captain Kean being the only ones who escaped down Limerick Lane to us. The Boche immediately advanced down Limerick Lane, but was held up by our bombing block.

"The main force of the attack swept down on the north side of Meath Post, and getting round our rear occupied Parr's Bank. Knowing that the latter was unoccupied I had previously established another bombing block in Kildare Avenue towards Parr's Bank. (C on sketch.)

"We were soon to have evidence that we were surrounded, for at 2.30 p.m. the enemy advanced on us down Kildare Lane from the Adelphi, and we had a lively fight at the bombing block. While this fight was going on an attack was made up Kildare Avenue from Parr's Bank and a stubborn fight ensued there. The Hun suffered pretty severely in these encounters, but we came off very lightly. About 3 p.m. the enemy attempted to leave the Adelphi for an attack on us across the open, but our fire was so intense that he did not get five yards.

"About half an hour later a light trench mortar, probably a Granatenwerfer, began to worry us from Meath Post, and a

Digitized by Google

machine gun was placed at the point where Kildare Avenue crossed under Fallen Tree Road, and this swept our parapet.

"During the remainder of the afternoon all bombing blocks were attacked several times, but our men held fast. I never to this day know what happened to the post in Kildare Lane, but it was impossible during daylight to cross Fallen Tree Road after the Adelphi was taken. I saw some Scottish go back during the afternoon, and concluded that they had evacuated the post. Assuming this, I was specially anxious, as an enemy post at the junction of Kildare Lane and Fallen Tree Road would have dominated the whole of our post, being as it was on a higher level and overlooking everything there.

"From nightfall to 3 a.m. all our bombing blocks were repeatedly attacked without any success for the enemy. In one case an attack on Limerick Trench Block nearly succeeded, but through the staunchness of Sergeant Phillipson, who was badly wounded, and one or two others, the enemy was driven out with the bayonet. The Granatenwerfer in Meath Post and one in the Adelphi annoyed us very much during this period. The moon was full and the night cloudless, and we had several opportunities of sniping shadows on Fallen Tree Road and elsewhere. Our artillery, which had been silent all day, woke up after dark, if one gun firing can be described as artillery, for one gun and one gun only fired every five or ten minutes throughout the night on to a target some distance beyond our original front line.

"As we had not had any communication from anyone since I returned from Battalion H.Q., Captain Roddick, who was Second in Command of the Scottish, and I decided to send messengers out to our Battalion H.Q. Two Scottish runners were chosen, and two of 'A' Company (Privates Marland and Baxendale). We did not give them anything in writing in case they were captured, but gave them a verbal message which they were to forget if they were caught. After having been given the direction, these four men set off in pairs at about five minutes interval, and as we afterwards heard, they reached Battalion H.Q. and were immediately sent back with two other runners with orders for us to evacuate Limerick Post and fight our way back. These orders never reached us as three of the runners were either killed or captured, Marland alone escaping.

"At 3 a.m. the enemy opened an intense trench mortar

Digitized by Google

bombardment on us from Meath and Adelphi, heavier from the latter. We had several casualties through this. Lance-Corporal Dockerty was killed, and the whole lot of his Lewis gun team was killed or wounded. One fell into the traverse where I and three men were. Lance-Corporal Collier was badly wounded, but the rest of us escaped injury.

"Shortly after this there was a small attack on the portion of the trench facing Epehy, but nothing came of it, for as soon as I had seen the Boche sweep past Meath Post I had spread the men round facing all directions.

"At 4.30 a.m. Captain Roddick and I discussed the situation. Careful as we had been with ammunition, it was nearly exhausted. Our new front line would by now be established and our 90 men would be more useful there. If we stayed till daybreak we should have to spend another day there provided we could hold out. A determined attack would probably be made at daybreak, and with our lack of ammunition and their trench mortars we should have no chance. At present there was a sporting chance of getting through at a point on the south-west of us. Weighing all these points up, we decided to evacuate the post, and Roddick divided the men into parties of 15 to 20 under an officer, and I went round the post sending all the men to him.

"As we had no stretchers, and had probably to do some fighting, we were unable to take our badly wounded with us. There were six of them, in addition to two stretcher bearers, who insisted that it was their duty to remain with the wounded. I left them with mixed feelings, glad that the wounded had someone to look after them, and proud to belong to a Battalion which possessed such men as these. These two men, Privates Dawson and Sharpe, did that night what I shall always consider one of the finest deeds of the war.

"I believe every sound man, except these two S.B.'s, was got out that night. We crossed Kildare Avenue and then we met the only Huns we saw that journey. It was either a patrol or a post from Kildare Avenue, but on seeing us they fled. We crossed Fallen Tree Road and moved by the side of it for some time. After going for about three-quarters of a mile we stopped as we heard voices. One of our fears was that on approaching our own front line we might be fired upon. What a relief it was to hear distinctly through the night 'Damn this ———

Digitized by Google

wire!' We knew we were near safety. There are times when a good old British 'damn' is like music to one's ears. Henderson was sent on to warn the wiring party that we were British, and then we followed. We found that behind the wire there was no trench, so the men were spread along, and they began digging in.

"As soon as the work was started I went to Battalion H.Q. and reported, and was sent down to hospital.

"There must have been 90 all ranks who came out of Limerick Post, 15 to 20 of these were Scottish, the rest belonging to 'A' and 'C' Companies of the King's Own.

"On the occasion of Sir Douglas Haig being presented with the Freedom of Liverpool he said: 'We come now to the Cambrai Battle, and to the gallant defence of Limerick Post by troops of the 1/10th Battalion Liverpool Regiment, and of another regiment from your own district, the King's Own.'"

The casualties disclosed by the Roll Call at Longavesnes Aerodrome were 10 officers and 247 other ranks, leaving the Battalion, including Transport, 421 strong.

Digitized by Google

Chapter XIII.

LA BASSEE SECTOR.

February-April 9th, 1918.

AT 4 p.m. orders were received to move to billets at Hamel, near Tincourt. Three days were spent here bathing, refitting, etc., and on December 5th the Battalion marched to Flamicourt-Peronne. Transport also moved there from Villers Faucon. The billets were very poor, consisting of broken-down houses and draughty huts. Fortunately the weather kept fine but very cold. This was again only a short stay, and on December 8th the Battalion, with cookers, entrained for Aubigny and marched to billets at Avesnes-le-Comte. Transport moved by road through Courcelles, and arrived next day. Only two days were spent here, during which time the men managed to get baths, and on the 11th the whole Division, by brigades, started on a four days' route march. On the first day the Battalion arrived at Tinques at 12 noon. On the 12th, although the distance was only 12 miles, bad roads were encountered, and after much loss of temper, the Battalion arrived at Eps at 3.30 p.m. Next day there was only a six miles march to Predefin, and the Battalion finally arrived at Laires on Friday, the 14th, where fairly moderate billets were shared with the 1/5th South Lancs., whose numbers were very small at this time. As drafts arrived for both Battalions in quick succession, there was great difficulty in finding suitable billets, but nevertheless the stay at Laires, even in the depth of winter, was greatly appreciated, as every-one realised that it was much worse in the trenches. Bomy was Divisional H.Q., and the whole life of the area naturally centred there. There conferences were held, and supplies and baths were obtained. Snow fell heavily on December 17th, but football was not yet interfered with. The " Waits " toured the

Digitized by Google

village on Christmas Eve, and the Christmas dinner was a great success, so much so that tea was not a popular meal. In the evening the company concerts in the estaminets were greatly enjoyed, for in addition to the local talent in the companies, the Padre (Captain G. L. Michel) set off on a round of visits with his concert party, and the M.O. (Lieutenant Elwood) set off in the opposite direction with his sketch party. A clash in the middle of their touring, by skilful management, was happily avoided. On Boxing Day there was a rifle competition, which was won by the team from the Transport and Quartermaster's Staff, much to the humiliation of the fighting men. The snow had now got so deep that football had to be abandoned, and sliding and snow-balling took its place. On the evening of Boxing Day, the Sergeants, who had helped to entertain the men on Christmas Day, held a most enjoyable dinner of their own.

After the Christmas festivities work was resumed, Parades on Aintree Racecourse, musketry and bayonet fighting on the range, lectures in the Church Army Hut, etc., filled the programme. The enormous expenditure on the war was being felt, and the cry was for economy. The Quartermaster attended a conference on economy at La Buissiere, where an excellent lecture was given by the 1st Corps Commander, Lieutenant-General Holland, our old 1st Division Commander. On Saturday, December 29th, the M.O., Lieutenant F. B. Elwood, left, much to everybody's regret, his place being taken by Lieutenant Hinton of the American Army.

New Year's dinner was as great a success as that on Christmas Day, for then the turkeys which had failed to turn up in time came as a great treat. Each year the Mayoress of Lancaster, from the Comforts Fund, provided these turkeys, first as whole birds at Sevenoaks in 1914, and afterwards in the more suitable form for active service, in tins. Plum pudding, in tins, also came every year from the same source, and many other good things throughout the war.

Training continued on Aintree Racecourse and the rifle range, and amongst other things a Brigade wiring competition was announced, the best team from each Battalion to compete. Sports, games, concerts, lectures filled in the time when not actually training and the time at Laires was most useful in reforming the Battalion. It came to an end on February 9th,

Digitized by Google

when the Battalion marched with Transport to Ligny-les-Aire, and the following day to Lapugnoy, the latest draft marching independently under Captain Hunt, and having baths on the way at Ferfay. The remainder of the Battalion had baths at Chocques. On Tuesday, February 12th, Battalion and Transport marched via Chocques to Oblinghem. From here the C.O. and other officers proceeded by bus to Gorre, and thence reconnoitred the front line at Festubert. On the 13th the Battalion marched to Gorre, being billeted in the Chateau and relieving the 1/5th East Lancs., and becoming reserve to the 165th Brigade. Transport and Stores settled at Le Quesnoy, near Beuvry.

The Battalion was exercised in taking up positions in case of shelling of the Chateau. On Sunday, the 17th, there was a church parade, and further reconnoitring of the line. On Wednesday, February 20th, the Battalion paraded in front of the Chateau, and was inspected by the 1st Corps Commander, Lieutenant-General Holland, who presented the V.C. and other decorations to officers and N.C.O.'s of the Divisional Artillery. Afterwards the Battalion marched past. The final shoot of the A.R.A. Competition was held at Beuvry on the 23rd, when No. 9 Platoon of "C" Company, under Second Lieutenant Dolby, represented the Brigade and won the competition. The Battalion was now back again in the 166th Brigade, and at 9.30 a.m. on the 25th, relieved the 1/5th South Lancs. in the left sub-sector of the left Brigade sector. Relief was complete at 1.15 p.m. This was the first of the daylight reliefs ever experienced by the Battalion, and was rendered possible as at this time the British held the ridge at Festubert, and the approaches were not under observation. Things were, as usual, quiet on this sector when the 55th Division took it over, and wiring and patrolling proceeded undisturbed. There was a rumour of a German attack on the 28th, but everything remained normal. In addition to the usual wiring of the front line, wiring of both flanks was commenced, and this, as will be seen later, proved the salvation of the left flank on April 9th. New dispositions were taken up on March 4th, "A" Company in Barnton locality being relieved by a company of the 1/5th South Lancs. and going into support, with two platoons and Company H.Q. in the old British line, one platoon in Cailloux Keep, and one platoon in Festubert Central. The Battalion front now

Digitized by Google

consisted of two companies in the front line and two in reserve. Transport and Stores moved from Le Quesnoy to Le Hamel on the 4th. The enemy artillery became more active on the 6th, and on the following day there was a heavy enemy barrage on our front. Second Lieutenant J. B. Walker was wounded and there were six other casualties. At the same time a raid was carried out by the enemy on the left company of the Battalion on our right. The shelling ceased at 6 a.m. and the situation became normal. Friday, March 8th, was fine and warm, and the old British line was heavily shelled, one man being killed and three wounded. On this day Second Lieutenant J. B. Walker died of wounds at No. 18 Casualty Clearing Station. " B " Company was relieved by " V " Company of the 1/10th Scottish, and returned to Gorre to prepare for a raid. Two more men were killed and one wounded on the 9th, when the enemy again shelled the old British line. On this day summer time came into force. On Sunday, March, 10th, Battalion went into support at Festubert, where they were shelled during the evening and the two following days, after which, on the 12th, the Battalion was relieved by the 1/10th Scottish, H.Q. and " C " Company joining " B " at Gorre Chateau and " A " and " D " Companies going to Ferme du Roi outside Bethune. Major Phillips, the Second in Command, who had joined at Laires, took temporary command of the 1/10th Liverpool Scottish before the relief. On the 13th the two companies at Ferme du Roi moved to Gorre Chateau, and the Battalion " stood to " at 5 a.m. The Chateau was shelled at night, the M.G. Company having some casualties. On the 14th " bustle " was received. This was a signal that certain defensive positions were to be occupied owing to an enemy attack. On this occasion it was given as a practice, and the following dispositions were taken :—

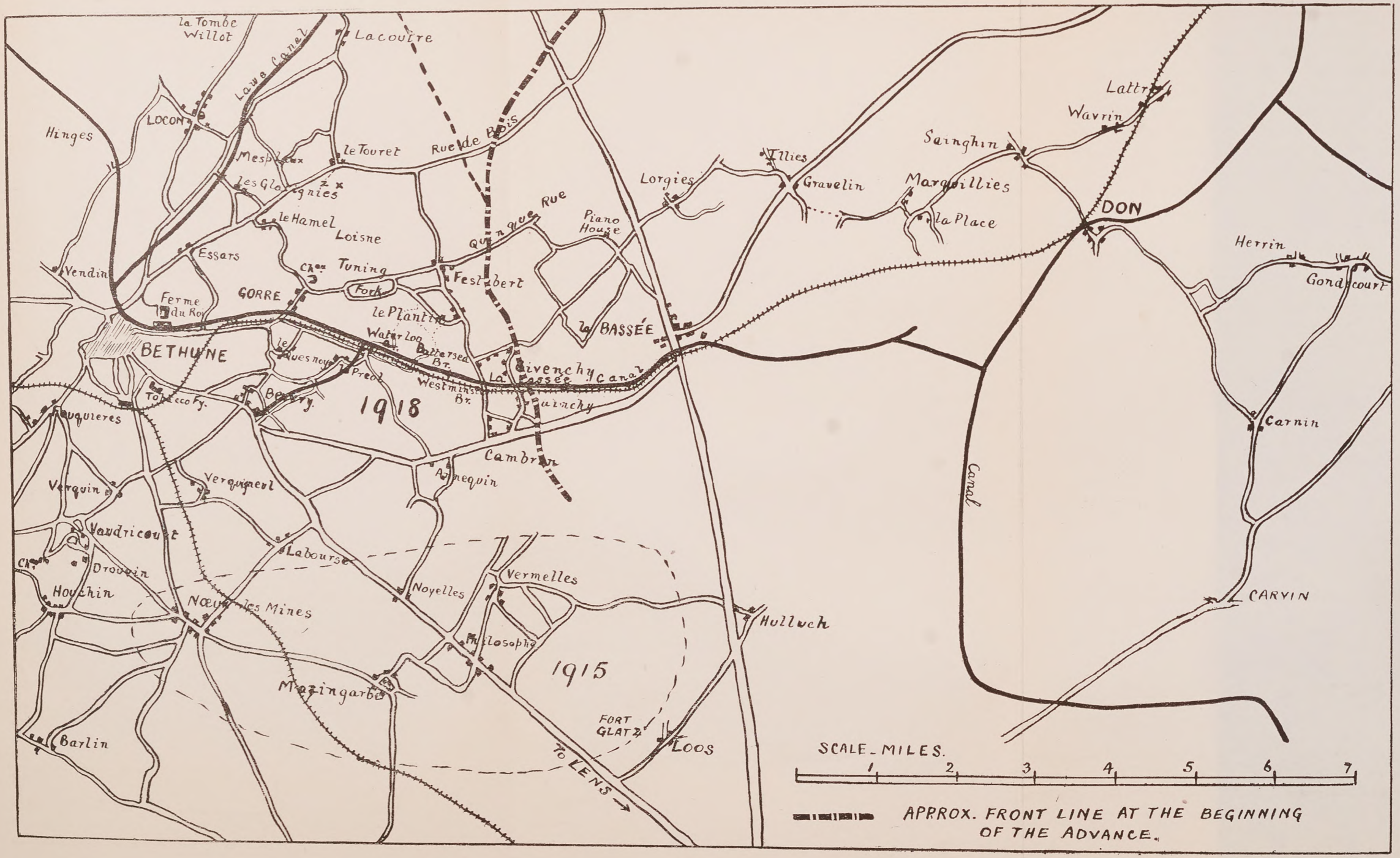
" A " Co. (less 1 platoon)	Festubert locality.
" A " Co. (1 platoon)	Route A Keep.
" C " Co. (less 2 platoons)	Le Plantin (north).
" C " Co. (2 platoons)	Le Plantin (south).
" D " Co.	Cailloux north and south.
Battalion H.Q.	Tuning Fork locality.

The Battalion " stood down " at 9 a.m. next day, and returned to Gorre Chateau. On Friday, the 15th, the Divisional Commander witnessed a rehearsal of " B " Company's raid at dawn.

Digitized by Google

LOOS (1915) AND BETHUNE (1918).

(including part of the ADVANCE.)



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The raid took place the following day at 5 a.m. against Dover Trench. The enemy trenches were penetrated as far as the support lines, but they were found to be evacuated, and no prisoners were taken. Captain H. P. Forshaw was O.C. raid, and Second Lieutenants Young, White and Buckley had charge of the men. There were only two men slightly wounded, and the whole company was back at Gorre Chateau for breakfast. Later in the day the Battalion proceeded to Ferme du Roi, where it was joined by Transport, the officers being billeted in Bethune. Much time was spent here in cleaning billets and surroundings, which were found very unsatisfactory. The Portuguese Area on the left of the 55th Division was reconnoitred in view of an enemy attack in that direction, and the Battalion " stood to " each day at 5 a.m., owing to the general expectation of the great attack, about which many warnings had been received. It was freely stated in Bethune that the Germans expected to occupy that town before Easter. On March 19th there was a lecture on " The Ambition and Aims of Germany," and the following day another lecture by the Brigadier. All was tension and expectation—the Battalion was on one hour's notice to move, but the attack when it did come on the 21st was further south, the attempted capture of Bethune coming later. At this rather inopportune moment a complete set of band instruments arrived, the present of Lord Shuttleworth and the Ladies of Lancashire. They were originally intended for the 8th Battalion of the King's Own, but as they already had a set, they were transferred to the 1/5th Battalion. Thursday, March 21st, fine and warm, and there was no indication of the tremendous happenings further south, but on March 23rd the whole Battalion was set to work burying cable, and on the 25th all leave was stopped, and officers and men away on courses of instruction were ordered to return to their units. The Major-General inspected " B " Company and thanked them for their excellent work during the raid. At 10 p.m. the same day the Battalion was ordered to the Tuning Fork (south) locality. There they " stood to " from 3 a.m. till 8 a.m., afterwards returning to Ferme du Roi. Orders had previously been received for the Battalion to relieve the 165th Brigade, but this was cancelled, and on March 27th the 1/5th South Staffs. were relieved at Cambrin, south of La Bassée Canal. The relief started at 11 a.m. and was not complete till 3.30 p.m. Two companies of the 1/5th South Lancs.

Digitized by Google

were attached. Transport moved to Le Preol, and next day to their old billets at Le Quesnoy, being joined by the Stores from Ferme du Roi. Further readjustments of the line were carried out on the 29th, when "A" Company, in the Village Line, was sent up to reinforce the reserve line, and one company of the 1/5th South Lancs. was sent up to take their place. The tour was a quiet one, patrolling and wiring and other trench improvements going on regularly. On Wednesday, April 3rd, the Battalion was relieved by the 1/5th South Lancs., and went to billets at Cambrin in Brigade Reserve till the 7th, when the 2nd Royal Sussex relieved and the Battalion went to billets in the Tobacco Factory, Bethune. H.Q. were prevented from leaving till next morning, owing to heavy enemy gas shelling. It was now arranged that the Battalion was to take over part of the Portuguese Sector, and after only one night in Bethune, the Battalion moved on the 8th to La Tombe Willot, near Locon, in the Portuguese Area. Transport also moved to Locon, but the bulk of the stores remained at Le Quesnoy.

Digitized by Google

Chapter XIV.

FESTUBERT-GIVENCHY.

April 9th, 1918.

THE billets at La Tombe Willot were very scattered and could only be reached by light wagons, as the roads were so bad. All was quiet on the night of the 8th, but at 4 a.m. next morning all the Locon Area and the approaches to it were heavily shelled. At 6 a.m. " bustle " was received, but cancelled at 7.30 a.m. Meanwhile the Battalion had been formed up near the main Locon road, and advantage was taken of the interval to have a hurried breakfast. At 8 a.m. " bustle " again came, but the positions to be taken up had been altered, and the Battalion moved up in rear of the Portuguese front, which it was found had been driven in. The whole Battalion had to cross Mesplaux Bridge, which was being heavily shelled, but all got over without casualties.

Major Phillips' account :—

" We reached La Tombe Willot about 1 p.m., and found the Portuguese still in our billets, so the men got their dinners on the roadside while waiting for the Portuguese to be cleared out. The billets were particularly filthy and scattered over nearly two miles. The Battalion alarm post was a field near the road junction one and a half miles north of Locon.

" That afternoon, about 5 p.m., just as the men were getting into billets we got orders to relieve the southernmost Portuguese Battalion in the line the following day, and orders were got out for the advance parties, etc., for the following morning. At 10 p.m. that night we were given general orders, in case of an attack, to support the southernmost Portuguese Brigade, and the other two units of our Brigade were to support respectively the other two Brigades of our Division holding Festubert and Givenchy Sectors.

Digitized by Google

"We were as it happened operating in a sector over which we had had no opportunity of doing any reconnaissance.

"Our strengths were approximately as follows:—

"'A' Company, 85 bayonets; 'B,' 'C' and 'D' Companies, 130 bayonets each; H.Q., 50 bayonets.

"'A' Company had 50 men away on duty with a Company of Tunnelling Engineers, hence the difference in strength.

"Each company had five Lewis guns and six officers.

"It was understood that the 'battle position' was the village line, the road running through Festubert Epinette and thence north-east.

"April 9th, 4 a.m. The enemy began a very heavy barrage and heavy shooting on the back areas. The alarm was given and the Battalion assembled at the alarm post and awaited orders. There was a very heavy mist, which lasted till about 10 a.m.

"About 6 a.m. we were told that no attack had developed but that we were to stand by. The C.O. and Adjutant went to Brigade H.Q. in Locon for orders, and the kitchens were got up for the men to breakfast. All this time heavy shelling going on north-east and south of us. Locon was getting well knocked about. It took a long time to get up the field kitchens, as the billets were so scattered and the side roads so bad. A great deal of movement was going on up the main road to Zelobes, and a battalion of cyclists went by.

"7.15. The C.O. returned to say the enemy were attacking heavily and that we were to move up at once to support the Portuguese. Positions were allocated as under:—

"'A' Company, Le Touret exclusive north up Emperor Road to link up with the cyclist battalion, which was extending south from Lacontine.

"'B' Company, Le Touret.

"'D' Company, a strong point and some trenches south-west of Le Touret, marked X on map.

"'C' Company, strong point and trenches Loisnes North.

"H.Q., on the Rue Du Bois somewhere east of Le Hamel.

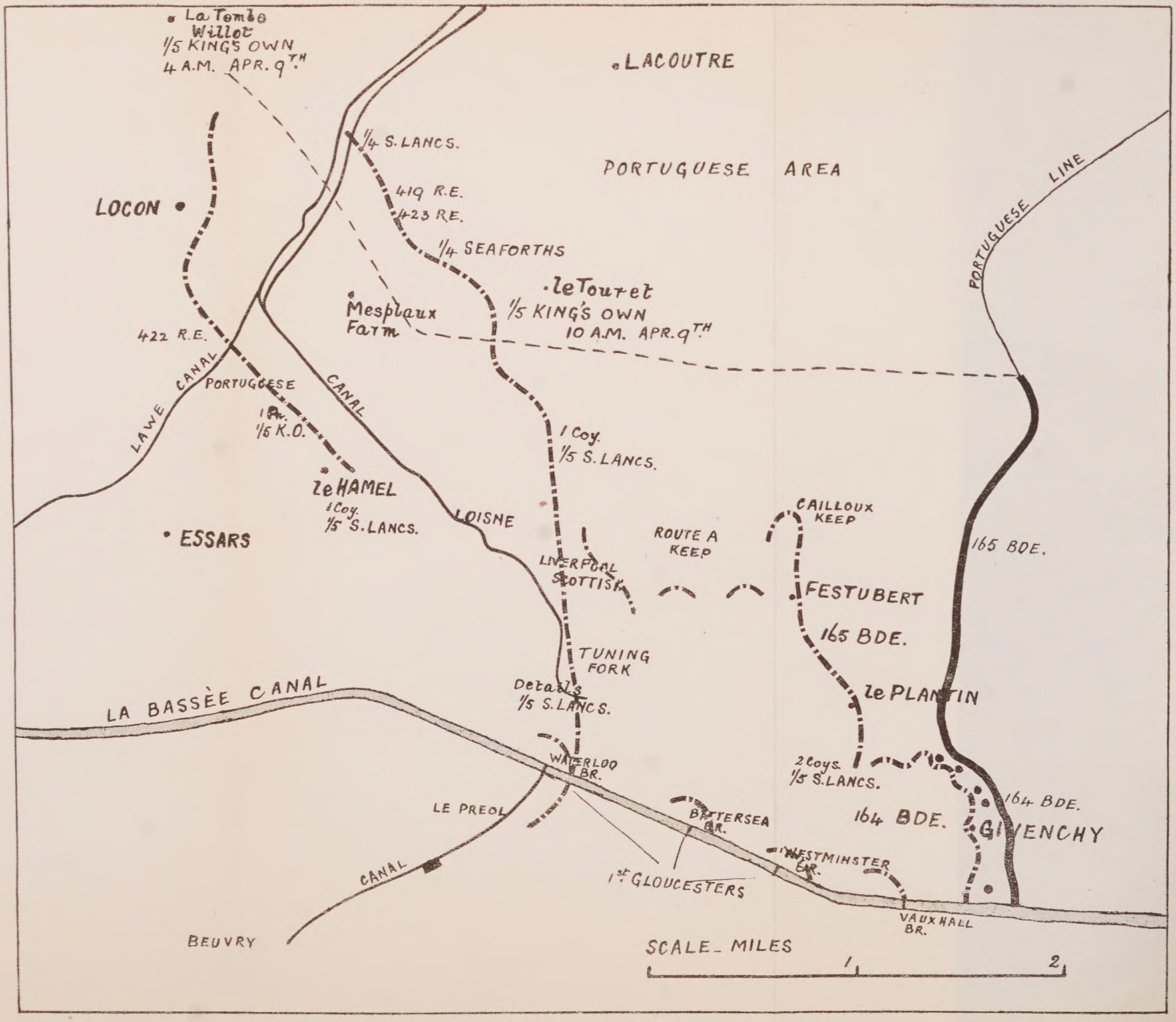
"7.30 a.m. The Battalion moved off following the route Locon-Mesplaux-les-Facons. The enemy were firing on Locon, the Locon-Mesplaux Bridge and fairly heavily forward from

Digitized by Google

FESTUBERT – GIVENCHY.
APR. 9TH 1918.

BR. LINE AT 4 A.M. APR. 9TH.

BR. LINE MIDNIGHT APR. 9TH



ADAPTED FROM
THE STORY OF THE 53TH DIV"

Digitized by Google

Mesplaux. There was a good deal of gas in the latter stages.

"9.10 a.m. Battalion H.Q. was located near the junction of the Dyke and the Rue Du Bois. Two men of the King's Liverpool Regiment reached us and stated that the enemy had overrun Festubert, and the two men were sent on to Brigade H.Q. H.Q. platoon began to dig themselves in with their entrenching tools on the west side of the Dyke, covering the Rue Du Bois with a flank thrown back facing Loisnes.

"10 a.m. 'B,' 'C' and 'D' Companies reported themselves in position, but nothing heard of 'A' Company, though 'B' Company stated that they had been in touch with 'A' Company's southern flank.

"10.15 a.m. Battalion Signal Office, etc., moved to the east end of Le Hamel, and heavy fire heard all along the front. A patrol which had been sent out to Loisnes reported no sign of enemy, but that Loisnes was being heavily shelled. All this time Portuguese streaming past in panic and disorder. Later two companies came past in better shape and these we impounded as a reserve with our H.Q. platoon and placed them in position with safeguards.

"12.30 p.m. Two runners came in from O.C. 'A' Company, who reported being in position, but stated that there was a gap of 1,000 yards to his north between his north flank and the Cyclists, to whom he had sent a patrol, and that 'A' Company could extend no further to the north, as they were then extended to their utmost capacity.

"1.15 p.m. The two runners from 'A' Company returned to say that they could not rejoin their company, but that heavy fire had been opened on them from where they had left the Company. Warned 'B' Company, and inquired of them; sent out officer's patrol to investigate. This patrol reported the same as the runners, and two subsequent patrols also reported identically, and that they could see Germans moving about on the spot.

"During the afternoon several attacks were made on the positions held by 'B,' 'C' and 'D' Companies, all of which were beaten off by small arms fire, for we had no artillery to help. Later we were informed that the Division had held up the Germans on the village line at Festubert and Givenchy and counter-attacked successfully, but that the enemy had broken through to the north, and had almost reached Locon. We were

Digitized by Google

also informed that an entrenching battalion and some details were in position from north of Les Facons through Mesplaux North to the River Aire. But all wires had been down or broken by shell fire since the first thing that morning, and we got no orders or information from the Portuguese.

" 5 p.m. ' A ' Company Seaforths (51st Division) reported to us, and were placed in position with our H.Q. platoon.

" ' B ' Company reported the enemy had brought one or more trench mortars into position against him.

" 6 p.m. More attacks on ' B,' ' C ' and ' D ' Companies, all beaten off, and the Company of Seaforths were moved forward to cover the one from Les Facons to a farm house west of Le Touret.

" 7 p.m. April 9th to 6 a.m. April 10th. A comparatively quiet night. Got S.A.A., bombs, etc., and food and water up to ' B,' ' C ' and ' D ' Companies. The men had had nothing to eat since breakfast. Heavy spasmodic shelling.

" 8 a.m. Heavy outburst of fire, and ' B ' Company reported hard pressed and nearly surrounded, but later reported all attacks beaten off.

" Four machine guns arrived and placed in position in front of Le Hamel—more arrived during the day. An artillery officer looking for an O.P. arrived, which looked as if we might expect some support from guns soon. One Lance-Corporal and two other ranks reached us, the sole survivors (with the two runners) of ' A ' Company, who had been encircled, rushed and swamped by overwhelming numbers in the mist, but went down fighting.

" 1 p.m. After more heavy firing it was reported that ' B ' Company had been finished, but the survivors (about 35 strong), though driven out of Le Touret by 2.30 p.m., took up a position at the point marked Z in prolongation of the one held by the Seaforths and so covering the gap between the latter and ' D ' Company at point X. They were reinforced there by the H.Q. platoon. These positions were held for the remainder of the day, in spite of several efforts by the enemy and some very nasty barraging from the captured Portuguese guns with open sights.

" 10 p.m. to 11.50 p.m. We were relieved.

" General. There seemed little doubt that the enemy was surprised by running up against our men in that sector, where they had only expected to find Portuguese. This and the wonderful show put up by the individual companies seemed to prevent

Digitized by Google

him making one big attack all along the front, in which case he must have broken through. The most critical time was the early afternoon of the 9th when, though we did not realise for the time being, there was nothing, after he had finished 'A' Company, between Emperor Road and Bethune except the H.Q. platoon in front of Le Hamel, while the head of another enemy column was close to Locon.

"The men were wonderful and fought splendidly under conditions very trying to morale, such as an unknown sector, the unfortunate example of the Portuguese, shortage of food, and no artillery support.

"The casualties were severe; I believe I was the fifteenth officer casualty in the Battalion. Their fighting spirit never shone brighter.

"I lay wounded in a shell hole between points X and Z all the afternoon and evening of the 10th, and had every opportunity of observation."

About mid-day on the 9th Transport, with as much of the officers' and men's kits as could be obtained and the Battalion dinners in the field kitchens, moved from Locon to a field behind Locon in W.6c. 8.2, but was shelled out and moved across the Lawe Canal to a field near Hingette. During the afternoon a message, carried by a gunner, reached Transport from O.C. "A" Company saying that the Company was hard pressed. Second Lieutenant Duxbury, "B" Company, was killed during this day, and his body was the only one recovered and sent down by Transport that night. As mentioned in Major Phillips' account, there was naturally no artillery support on the 9th, but by the 10th some had been established, and the 51st Division having arrived, the gaps were filled up and the line secured. Transport, which on the 9th had been brigaded, again had to move on the morning of the 10th, having again come under enemy fire, and in the afternoon it was decided, owing to continued shelling, to move still further away to Vendin behind Bethune. During the night more salvaged kits were obtained from La Tombe Willot, and the bulk of the stores left at Le Quesnoy were moved by lorry. It had not been possible to move these valuable stores from Le Quesnoy to La Tombe Willot on the 8th, which was fortunate, as otherwise they would probably have been captured. One man guarding the kits at La Tombe Willot had been killed, and one at Le Quesnoy wounded.

Digitized by Google

Early on the 11th Battalion H.Q. moved to Les Glatignies. All was quiet, though it was known that there was a heavy concentration of the enemy on the Battalion front. There was an attack on the left, which caused our line to fall back, but the position was restored during the evening. On the morning of the 12th the S.O.S. went up on our left front, and the enemy attacked Mesplaux Farm, but was repulsed. All was then quiet till 8 p.m., when an attack again came on the left with no success. The Transport and Stores, which had so far been in a very precarious position, being in full view of the enemy at Vendin, now moved to Gosnay, in another Corps area, where things were quiet. The last wagons were leaving the field at Vendin when the shells arrived. Half an hour later on each of the moves would have meant disaster to the Brigade Transport. The morning of April 13th was very quiet. "B" Company formed a defensive flank on the west side of the Lawe Canal, and were joined by Second Lieutenant Yare's party of 56 men from the 251st Tunnelling Company. In the afternoon there was a heavy bombardment, and Battalion H.Q. suffered severely. The enemy attacked, but was repulsed, and in the evening Battalion H.Q. moved to a farm 500 yards in rear. The 14th also opened quietly, but "B" and "D" Companies, who had relieved the 1/4th South Lancs. (Pioneer Battalion) in Mesplaux Farm, were heavily shelled in the afternoon. At night the Battalion was relieved by the 1st Northumberland Fusiliers and the 4th Royal Fusiliers. Relief was completed by 1 a.m., and the companies marched independently to Vendin, where lorries picked them up and took them to Raimbert, where they arrived about 5 a.m. Transport and Stores had previously arrived from Gosnay. During the 15th the Battalion rested and counted the cost. The casualties were:—

	Killed.	Wounded.	Missing.	Total.
Officers ...	1	5	9	15
N.C.O.'s & Men	22	62	141	225
	23	67	150	240

Digitized by Google

Chapter XV.

THE SUMMER OF 1918.

THE weather at Raimbert, a mining village, was cold and unsettled. Reorganisation and refitting went on apace, most of the officers and men having lost their kits in the billets at La Tombe Willot. Baths were obtained at the mines, where the arrangements were excellent. On the 19th the Major-General once more congratulated the Battalion on the fine defence they had made, and the rest came to an end on the 20th. The five days had not altogether been enjoyable owing to the cold and wet. But those were not the days for long rests, and the Division having refitted, were wanted back in the line. The Battalion went by lorry to Labourse. Transport going by road. The village had been subjected to much gas shelling, and all the inhabitants had left their houses, which were complete with furniture, and over almost every door was posted "Out of bounds." The billets available were therefore few, the men occupying evacuated artillery huts. Only one night was spent here, and on the 21st the Battalion relieved the 1st South Wales Borderers in the Festubert-Loisne Sector. At 9 p.m. they proceeded by light railway, and came temporarily under the command of the 3rd Brigade, 1st Division. Transport and stores moved the same evening to Fouquieres, being billeted in a vacated casualty clearing station. The Battalion completed the relief by 1.25 a.m. There was much hostile shelling, and at 4 a.m. Route A Keep, occupied by "C" Company, was attacked and captured by the enemy, the casualties being two officers and 11 other ranks. At midnight "D" Company attempted to retake Route A Keep, but owing to faulty barrage the attempt was not successful. Tuesday, April 23rd, was quiet. The details and band left the Transport lines for Burbure, and the Brigade was strengthened by the arrival of the 2/10th Liverpool Scottish. Just as rations were ready to leave the Transport lines, the enemy commenced shelling, killing one

Digitized by Google

storeman and wounding one officer and three men. At 4 a.m. on the 24th a company of the 2/10th Scottish took Route A Keep. Transport and Stores moved to Drouvin Chateau the same day. The Battalion was relieved on the 25th by the 1/5th and 1/6th South Staffords, and went to support south of the La Bassée Canal. Next day the whole Battalion was out on working parties, and at night went to billets in Verquigneul, another evacuated village, but by this time more of the buildings could be used as billets, and there was a fair amount of comfort. "A" Company had remained as a guard on Vauxhall and Westminster Bridges over the Canal. On the same day the Transport and Stores moved once more to lines and huts at Houchin, where they remained all the following summer. On the evening of the 28th the C.O., Adjutant, and Company Commanders attended a Major-General's conference at Labourse, and "A" Company was relieved at Westminster and Vauxhall Bridges by a composite company of "details" of the 166th Brigade. Baths were obtained at Labourse on the 29th, and on the 30th at Houchin, which was now the centre of the "Q" side of the Division, containing all the Transport lines, the Cinema, the Divisional "Roses" Concert Party, the Ordnance depot, baths, etc. Six new officers arrived, Captain W. Hesketh, and Second Lieutenants W. W. Deacon, J. T. Price, F. Howson, C. L. Husband, and N. G. Hill.

On Thursday, May 2nd, the Battalion went to the line at Festubert and La Plantin. The companies, with their Lewis gun limbers, went along the Annequin-Beuvry road, which was heavily shelled. One shell fell near a Lewis gun limber, killing the driver, Private Glaister, and wounding two others. The following morning the front line and immediate supports were shelled with 14in. armour piercing shells, and this continued at intervals of seven minutes from 10.30 a.m. to 7.45 p.m. One shell hit a dug-out occupied by part of "B" Company, killing Second Lieutenant Adie and Private Gleeson and wounding four others. Ten other ranks were missing, but their bodies were afterwards found. Two platoons of "D" Company were attached to "B" Company, and were replaced by two platoons of the 1/5th South Lancs. These two last platoons were relieved next day by a composite platoon of "details" under Second Lieutenant Park. The "details" consisted of newly arrived drafts without experience, who had previously

Digitized by Google

been kept out of the line for training purposes. The shelling continued, and on the 7th six other ranks were wounded by a salvo which struck "B" Company H.Q. This continual shelling day and night caused a rearrangement of the defence, the front line being very thinly held and the support line forming the main line of resistance. The weather had greatly improved during the last few days, and continued so till the 13th. Two more men were killed and four wounded on the 9th, when an expected enemy attack did not materialise. The 1/10th Liverpool Scottish relieved on May 10th, relief being complete about 1 a.m. on the 11th. Night reliefs were necessary, as after April 9th the enemy held the higher ground at this part. The Battalion was now in support, the time being spent in wiring to the west of Cailloux Keep, and on May 14th the 1/7th Liverpools relieved, the King's Own going to billets at Verquigneul after a night in the "bustle" positions. The weather had again turned fine, and during the rest and cleaning up, the men enjoyed the luxury of the band. The area round Battalion H.Q. was shelled with gas and H.E. shells on the 17th, one orderly room clerk being wounded. The orderly room was then moved into the Mairie. Again on the 18th the village was shelled, but no damage resulted. Lieutenant-Colonel Wayte, D.S.O., here returned from leave, but did not take over command, as a few days later he was granted long leave. Major Hoare thereupon took definite command. He had joined as Second in Command after Major Phillips was wounded in April. The village was again shelled on the 20th, retaliation probably for our guns round Verquigneul, which were very active. At night the Battalion went to the line, Battalion H.Q. being in Addison Road, near an R.E. dump, which was shelled on the morning of the 21st, causing casualties to four R.E.'s and one South Lancs., killed. While the C.O. and the Brigade Major were visiting the front line on the 22nd, the enemy put a fairly heavy barrage on the village line from Ration Corner to Le Plantin South. There were 12 enemy planes over at the time. Next day four enemy planes were again over, and fought one of ours, which, however, got away. The enemy seemed very uneasy, and during the night sent up orange coloured double Very lights, after which a heavy barrage was put on the Battalion front, causing no casualties.

As the Transport lines at Houchin had become rather con-

Digitized by Google

gested, the 166th Brigade lines were moved to a field further out, the stores remaining in the huts, which were now being partly earthed up as a precaution against bombs.

A poor specimen of a Boche was caught in No Man's Land on the 26th. He was very stupid and useless as a means of information. Enemy generally very active, his aircraft flying low over our lines, so low that Lewis guns were brought to bear to drive them off. One of our patrols ran into the enemy lines on the 28th, six being wounded, but four managed to get away. It was afterwards discovered that one of the two captured. Second Lieutenant Price, died of wounds. The Battalion was relieved on the morning of May 29th by the Scottish, and after taking up their support positions on the Canal Bank, reconnoitred the "bustle" positions. Conferences were held on the possibilities of the "bustle" arrangements, working parties at the same time being found for Festubert. On Saturday, June 1st, the Battalion was relieved by the 1/7th Liverpools, and after spending the night in the "bustle" positions arrived at Drouvin Camp, near Houchin, at 7 a.m. On the 2nd baths were available in the camp, which had originally been a prisoners of war camp, but apparently had never been used as such.

During the rest the Padre arranged a garden party in the neighbouring Vaudricourt Wood, and this was greatly enjoyed. On Friday, June 7th, the Assistant Transport Officer, Lieutenant J. W. Gardner, was badly wounded at the Transport lines by a bullet from an enemy plane, and Captain W. Hesketh took over his duties. Next day the Battalion relieved the 1/5th Liverpools in the left sector, relief, with no casualties, being completed by 1.30 a.m. Two men were killed in Cailloux Keep by trench mortars on the 10th, and it became evident that the place was dangerous on account of its easy raiding possibilities. One of our low-flying planes came down on the 12th, but the pilot and observer managed to get to Cailloux Keep. The tour was quiet, and the enemy offensive spirit seemed to be at low ebb, probably owing to the fine hot weather. On June 17th the Battalion went into support and on the 21st, after a night in "bustle" positions, to Vaudricourt No. 1 Camp. A church parade was held for a change on June 23rd, and the Sergeants enjoyed a smoking concert on the 24th. The following day the Major-General presented medals to "C" Company No. 9 Platoon, the winners of the A.R.A. Competition, and a gas

Digitized by Google

demonstration was given in the afternoon. The Battalion took over the right sub-sector on the 26th, going by lorries part of the way. Everything was reported quiet. Things livened up on the 28th, when the enemy was treated to gas shells, and Second Lieutenant Hardy engaged an enemy listening post, killing three of the occupants. Support positions were occupied on June 30th, and on July 4th a quick and quiet relief of the 1/5th South Lancs. found the Battalion in the left sub-sector. Second Lieutenant Hill here found a Boche post unoccupied, so he waited the arrival of the enemy, wounding the first who came into view, when the rest ran away. He himself was slightly wounded in the foot. At 11 p.m. on July 7th the 1st Division made a raid, and at the same time the Battalion attempted to rush an enemy post. The enemy was very much on the alert, and nothing was gained, the only result being a heavy retaliatory shelling. On Wednesday, July 10th, our artillery cut the enemy wire in preparation for a raid, which was conducted by Lieutenant T. S. Blakeley, M.C., Second Lieutenant H. Carless and Second Lieutenant H. F. Woodcock. One prisoner was captured, but the returning raiding party was caught in the enemy barrage, seven men being killed and five wounded. Second Lieutenant H. Carless was awarded the M.C. for this night's work. Second Lieutenant H. F. Woodcock was missing, afterwards being reported prisoner. The raiding party was taken by lorry to Drouvin Camp, being joined later by the Battalion, who had meanwhile spent a few hours in " bustle " positions. Major C. C. Marshall, a King's Own officer, joined that day as Second in Command. On July 12th the Transport won the Brigade Cup at the show held in Vaudricourt Chateau grounds, and on the 14th a Brigade Church Parade was held. The Battalion went back to the line on the 15th. H.Q. being at Battersea Bridge. There seemed to be much activity behind the enemy line, and our artillery became more active, apparently cutting enemy wire. On the 19th came news of a great French victory down south—15,000 prisoners and 200 guns.

Aeroplanes were active on both sides, but their activities were stayed by a terrific thunderstorm. This was on July 20th, when a garrison battalion of the 59th Division were attached for instructional purposes. It was afterwards found that a mistake had been made and they were withdrawn, much to everyone's relief. On July 24th, two snipers (Privates Stirzaker and

Digitized by Google

McKenna) rushed an enemy post in daylight, killing the sentry. The following day Second Lieutenant Hamilton took a patrol during the early hours, but ran into 40 of the enemy. He managed to wound and kill three, but was then overwhelmed and killed. The Battalion came to support at night, and Lieutenant-Colonel Hoare proceeded on a course of instruction at Boulogne, Major Marshall taking command. On July 28th the Battalion went to the usual " bustle " positions, and next morning arrived at Vaudricourt No. 1 Camp. Here teams for another A.R.A. Competition and a wiring competition began training. A route march took place on August 2nd during heavy rain. Altogether this rest was not enjoyed, and the Battalion was glad to be back in the support line on the night of August 3rd. During this tour the Divisional Horse Show took place, and for the first time the King's Own Transport did not secure first place. Lieutenant-Colonel Hoare, who had returned from Boulogne, went on French leave on August 7th. The previous day a shell had fallen on " C " Company's H.Q. on the Canal bank near Waterloo Bridge, killing four and wounding six men, and on the 7th during the relief of the Scottish in the Cailloux Sector, " B " Company had two men killed and four wounded. Battalion H.Q. at Duke Post was slightly shelled on the 9th, but otherwise things were quiet, till the 15th, when the Battalion went to " bustle " positions in the Sailly Labourse line, and next morning to Vaudricourt No. 2 Camp, the worst in the area. Here a reserve line of trenches was occupied, for practice (!) for a few hours. Much more enjoyable was the Brigade Boxing Competition, the Cup being won by a King's Own team, consisting of Sergeants Barnes, Atkinson, and Craig, Corporal Speight, Lance-Corporal Crabtree, and Private Batty. Next day, August 20th, the Battalion proceeded by light railway to the line, relieving the 1/5th Liverpools in the right sub-sector. Here Lieutenant-Colonel Hoare resumed command. " B " Company H.Q. were in Tramway House, and here a shell fell and killed the Company Commander, Lieutenant W. Deacon. M.C. On August 23rd " A " Company were given the task of co-operating with the 164th Brigade in linking up after the capture of the craters which were lost in April.

Captain Bennett's report and Lieutenant Yare's account of the attacking platoon :—

Digitized by Google

"The 164th Brigade attacked on August 24th with the 1/4th King's Own on the right and the 2/5th Lancs. Fusiliers on the left. 'A' Company of the 1/5th King's Own were to advance up Cheshire Road and link up with the 2/5th Lancs. Fusiliers. The attack began at 7.30 a.m. Lieutenant Yare, in charge of the attacking platoon of 'A' Company, was able to report at 7.50 a.m. that all new positions had been taken up, that little resistance had been met, and that consolidation was proceeding. The whole operation had been a triumph of organisation and forethought, orders being carried out to the letter, and so minimising the risks. The linking up with the 2/5th Lancs. Fusiliers was early accomplished, and a few weak counter-attacks easily repulsed."

On Sunday, August 25th, at 5 a.m. the S.O.S. went up, and a creeping barrage was put down by our artillery, during a counter-attack on the craters. At night the Battalion was relieved by the Scottish, and went to support on the Canal bank. All was quiet, the enemy having apparently withdrawn his artillery from the forward areas, but on the 29th he put down some Yellow Cross gas shells around H.Q. at Canal House. Later in the day the Gorre vicinity was treated to 5.9's, and during the shelling Second Lieutenant M. M. Phillips was wounded. On the 30th the 1/5th South Lancs. were relieved, and it being reported that the division on our left had advanced, liaison was established with the 1/6th Sherwoods, who confirmed the news. This tour was only a short one, and on September 2nd the Battalion was back in Drouvin Camp. Here a tactical exercise was carried out under the B.G.C., including contact patrol with the R.A.F. Boxing contests were held and also a paper chase. The days were fine and warm and thoroughly enjoyed. The official Army photographer took photographs of all the Battalion by companies, etc., the first of their kind.

Digitized by Google

Chapter XVI.

THE ADVANCE.

September-November, 1918.

By this time, the constant hammering down south had had its effect on the Divisional front, and when the Battalion went back to the line on September 8th, the support positions occupied were practically the old village line, and when the front line was taken over on the 12th it was found to be 3,000 yards advanced, and a day later the two support companies were moved to the front line in anticipation of an advance. When this came on the 14th it was found that the enemy were holding the line with machine guns, but some parties encountered retired after some opposition, and did not attempt to retake the position lost. On this day " booby traps " were first encountered. The first consisted of two boxes of Amonal with detonated wire attached. On the wire being pulled the charge would explode. The second consisted of a bully beef tin with wire attached. The men who found this lengthened the wire and pulled, when the charge exploded harmlessly. " D " Company advanced 150 yards on the 15th, and numerous explosions in the enemy lines told of further preparations for further retreats. There was still opposition at the various attempts to advance, and some enemy artillery was still in action. On the 16th the 1/5th South Lancs. took up the front line, the reserve H.Q. being now at Duke Post, which had previously been the front line H.Q. The South Lancs. advanced 400 yards on the 20th, taking 41 prisoners. In further preparation for the advance the Transport and Stores moved to Fouquieres, but it now being the turn of the Brigade for a rest, the 165th Brigade took over the sector, and the 166th went back to Bethune to billets which were found to be quite good, that part of the town having suffered little from the shelling. Nothing of note occurred during this rest, and the Battalion was back in the line on September 29th. By now the trenches had been left behind, and the line now consisted of a

Digitized by Google

series of outposts. One patrol encountered strong opposition, and had two killed and eight wounded, all of whom were got back. A general advance was made with little opposition on October 2nd, the line being formed on the Hauberdine Line, east of the Aubers-Fromelles Line. The advance was continued next day, but "D" Company encountered opposition and Captain W. H. Metcalfe, M.C., was wounded. This day's advance had been more rapid than the enemy had expected, and the villages of Grand Moisnil, La Place, and Marquillies were found intact, and provided good billets. The Scottish took up the outpost line here, and the Battalion were in reserve in La Place and Marquillies. Transport also moved, A echelon to Festubert, and B echelon and Stores to Gorre. Here, however, they were found still to be too far in rear, and the next day A echelon moved to Petit Moisnil, and the remainder to Lorgies, which consisted of one or two large concrete dug-outs and a number of cellars. There was much difficulty in getting the heavier wagons through the broken swampy roads. The whole of the Brigade Transport passed over a bridge at the entrance to Lorgies without mishap, though next day a lorry which attempted to cross the same bridge was blown into the air, the bridge having been mined. All surplus stores had been left at a divisional dump at Bethune, only the minimum of necessaries being taken forward. The enemy were now entrenched before Don, and an attack by the Scottish was repulsed with heavy loss. "C" Company were therefore sent to Hocron to support the Scottish, who were later relieved by the South Lancs. Quiet days followed, except that the enemy, who had retained his lighter guns in his forward area, shelled the Divisional front promiscuously.

On October 10th the Battalion took over the support line at Wavrin and Lattre from the 74th Division. This was a very nasty corner, and "D" Company had 15 casualties during the relief. There was also much gas shelling in this area, which continued till the Battalion was relieved on the 12th. The Brigade was again due for a rest, and as there were no billets nearer than Bethune, the Battalion was taken by lorries there, Transport also having to go back over the same bad roads instead of by the La Bassée-Bethune main road.

The same billets were occupied in Bethune, but the short stay was not enjoyed, as the weather was wet, and it was known

Digitized by Google

that the Battalion might have to go forward at short notice. "Bustle" came on the 16th. The Battalion went by lorry to Gravlin, marching from there to Petit Moisnil. Transport went back to Lorgies and Petit Moisnil, and everybody was on an hour's notice, as the enemy had commenced his retirement once more. The move came next day, through Don to Gondecourt, partially destroyed. Transport followed to Don after a bridge had been hastily thrown across the Canal there. All the houses presented scenes of wanton destruction, and all important points on the roads had been blown up. The enemy, however, never completely blocked the roads, and a way round was always found. On Friday, the 18th. everybody was again on the move, and the fairly large town of Seclin was occupied. Here the billets were in a much better state, and the first Belgian inhabitants were encountered, a few old men left behind by the enemy. The houses here and at the last place passed had been prepared for burning, but for some reason best known to the Boche, the light had not been applied. The men were in high glee at finding such good billets, and there was much disappointment when the order came to move another four kilometres to Templemars. Here the inhabitants were plentiful, with the result that billets were difficult to find. In the meantime the Transport had arrived at Seclin, and remained there, the stores wagons going on to Templemars. The inhabitants were overjoyed to meet the British troops, and such as they had, mostly coffee, they gave the troops in plenty. Next morning there were no orders to move, and hopes were entertained of another night in Templemars, but at 4 p.m., during a Brigade Conference in a German hangar, orders were received for a move to Grand Ennetierès. It was only a short distance, but it began in the dark, and it was 10.30 p.m. before all were settled in. The main portion of the Transport was still at Seclin. Next morning, the 20th, the trek was resumed, a long march through Cysoing ending at Bourghelles. Here again the billets were inadequate, but the inhabitants tried to make up for any deficiencies by their cheerfulness. The weather had turned cold and wet, and the men now began to feel the lack of blankets. Throughout this constant marching the men had kept wonderfully cheerful and fit. the feeling of exhilaration at chasing the enemy no doubt being a great help. At Bourghelles the whole of the Transport joined up. The animals were also in

Digitized by Google

good condition in spite of the hard roads and obstacles. The actual billets of Echelon B were in Quennaumont, 200 yards from Bourghelles. The next day, October 21st, the whole Battalion followed by Transport arrived at Esplechin (Maraiche) early in the afternoon. The roads from Cysoing and Bourghelles to Esplechin were quite inadequate to deal with the mass of Transport which used them for the next fortnight. They consisted of one very narrow pavé centre with the usual mud on each side. During the enforced halt in this neighbourhood much labour was expended on the only road from Cysoing (Divisional H.Q.) to Esplechin, and the advance was again continued before it was half completed. From Esplechin to Tournai the roads were better constructed, though the course was much broken up during the enemy retreat. Thus there was fairly good communication through the chain of villages, Maraiche, Esplechin, Froidmont and Willemeau to Ere and St. Maur. Here the outpost began, the enemy being in front of Tournai with the Escault. a fairly wide river at this point, behind him. The line of the 55th Divisional advance did not include Tournai except for the southern outskirts. The outpost line of the Brigade was first held by the 1/5th South Lancs., the Scottish being in support at Froidmont, and the King's Own in reserve at Esplechin. The last-named was a long straggling village, and as it was found that the billets at the western (Maraiche) end were too far back, a move was made to the eastern end, where the billets were worse, naturally. Here a disconnected line of trenches was made as a precaution against an enemy attack. This short stay at Esplechin was rather enjoyable, as the enemy artillery had not yet become a nuisance, and the weather was of the fine autumn variety. On October 26th the Brigade reliefs took place, the King's Own being "B" Battalion or support Battalion in Froidmont. The Scottish went to Ere and St. Maur to relieve the South Lancs. as "A" Battalion, the South Lancs taking over "C" Battalion billets at Esplechin from the King's Own. The Transport (Echelon A) of "A" and "B" Battalions were stationed in an old Boche motor shed between Froidmont and Willemeau, Echelon A of "C" Battalion was at Esplechin, and Echelons B of the whole Brigade were at Maraiche. The weather still continued fine, and the stay at Froidmont was quiet and enjoyable. It was here that a large park of Boche derelict wagons was dis-

Digitized by Google

covered, the enemy by this time not having animals to move them. This discovery no doubt led to the report in one of the London papers about the huge capture of German transport in their hasty retreat. Those who quietly walked round selecting suitable wagons for the further advance, smiled at the heroic "capture." As lorries had been left behind to bring up supplies, the problem of getting further forward necessary supplies had become very difficult, and those who had a few "buckshee" horses and mules readily harnessed them up to these light ammunition wagons and field cookers. The King's Own band found one of them a great relief, as so far they had toiled after the Battalion carrying their instruments in addition to their equipment. The state of those instruments at the close of the campaign testified to the care the men had taken during those arduous days. On Monday, October 28th, came news of the Austrian collapse, and it became evident that the hammering further south was having its effect on the Germans. It was also rumoured that the Turks were ready to sign the Armistice.

There was a large lunatic asylum in Froidmont, containing inmates, who later had to be evacuated to Lille owing to the shelling. This asylum came in very useful for baths and later for stores.

News came on October 31st of the Armistice with Turkey, so that the Battalion took over its front line duties as "A" Battalion on that day in fine spirits.

The dispositions were as follows :—

"A" Company	Right front, holding St. Maur.
"B" Company	Centre.
"D" Company	Left, in front of the Monastery.
"C" Company	Reserve in Ere.

It was quite an interesting front. From the high ground there was a good view of Tournai and the enemy front line posts round the Barges Chateau. The days were quiet, daylight patrols walking about with impunity, but the M.G.'s were very active at night. One of our 18-pounders, "The Roving Gun," moved up in daylight and fired 20 rounds over open sights at the factory and other targets only 500 yards away. News of the Armistice with Austria came on November 1st. Lieutenant Hill, in command of "A" Company while Captain Bennett was on leave, reported that he believed the enemy was retiring.

Digitized by Google

This was found to be incorrect. During the afternoon St. Maur was shelled, and during the evening Willemau, now Battalion Headquarters.

Barges Chateau had so far resisted attack, and a scheme was prepared for " B " and " C " Companies to raid it. This scheme became so ambitious that the Major-General vetoed it, and finally it was decided to try and get a prisoner from " Mystery House " in front of St. Maur, on the road to Pont a Rieu. This was a building not marked on the map and hardly visible except from one point on another sector. From this point it appeared, grey and indistinct. The garrison was doubtful, but there were certainly two or three M.G.'s with a slight trench commanding the road and other posts right and left. Similar defences were found outside Ath in course of construction when the Armistice came.

The raid on November 5th was preceded by an artillery programme, bursts at 11.00 hours, 11.10 hours, 12.00, 12.10, 13.00, 13.10, and 14.00. Then when the sentries were naturally keeping low expecting the 14.10 hours burst of fire, the raid took place by a platoon of " A " Company under Lieutenant Hill. As the raiding party was forming up they were shelled in their farm, but without casualties. The weather was favourable to the enterprise as a steady drizzle was being blown in the faces of the enemy. As soon as the 14.00 hours burst from our guns ceased, the raiding party moved forward, and reached the trench south of " Mystery House " without being seen. One sentry was taken prisoner by Sergeant Swann, Lieutenant Hill shot one of the enemy as he was emerging from a shelter, and Private Newman killed another. Then Lieutenant Hill blew his whistle as a signal to retire. The enemy being now thoroughly roused, fired from both flanks, but the covering party from " A " Company immediately replied, and under cover of this the raiding party got away without casualties, the prisoner running on ahead, and seemingly only too anxious to be taken. On arrival at the farm, which was the point of departure for the raid, the prisoner volubly explained that he was a Pole, and only too willing to give any amount of useful information. As, however, the farm was getting too hot owing to enemy shelling, a return to " A " Company H.Q. was made by twos and threes, again without casualties. At night the 1/5th South Lancs. relieved, the King's Own going back to Esplechin as " C " Battalion. Next day

Digitized by Google

was very wet, but the cheerful news came that German delegates had left Berlin to discuss terms of Armistice. The Battalion had baths, a concert and supper for the raiding party, and on the 8th went forward to Willemeau in a drizzling rain, as the Germans had begun another retirement. They, however, held the Escault with M.G.'s and did not cross till next day, when the whole Brigade moved forward to Chercq, the bridge there having been blown up, of course. After a slight delay, the men passed over a half finished pontoon bridge, being shortly followed by the Echelon A's of the Transport without accident. This was a truly remarkable engineering feat. The heavier Transport remained at Chercq that night without crossing, except to carry forward the rations to the Battalion billets in the Marais de la Louviere, east of Tournai. The inhabitants as usual showed the keenest interest and delight in the passage of the British Troops. A halt had been made for dinner, the field cookers always accompanying their companies with Echelon A, and at night the band played the Belgian National Anthem and other airs on the village green. This was rendered possible as the Battalion was in "C" position after November 5th. On Sunday, November 10th, the Battalion proceeded along the main Tournai-Leuze-Ath road, arriving at Leuze about 11.30 a.m. with the band playing the Belgian National Anthem amidst the greatest enthusiasm. A halt was made in the square, where dinners were obtained. After dinner the massed bands of the Brigade played to wildly delirious crowds, and the civilian town band played for the first time for four years. Later there was a civilian thanksgiving service, the troops went off to their billets, Transport and Stores arrived and settled in, and the town calmed down, but the stream of Army traffic continued long into the early hours of the morning. The Battalion was off at 8 a.m. on the 11th, and it was not for some time discovered why, for this was to be "Armistice Day," and the King's Own were only "B" Battalion. However, the enemy had been located at Ath, and was reported to be "sticking," so the whole Division was going to attack. At Villers St. Amand. at 10 a.m. it was reported that the enemy was retiring, and that Erzberger was empowered to sign the Armistice. Hostilities in that case were to cease at 11 a.m. Peals of bells from surrounding villages rang out the glad news, bells that had been silent for four years. The weather was not kindly, but the drizzling rain had no effect on

Digitized by Google

the spirits of the men or the inhabitants. A halt at mid-day for dinners and then a triumphant entry into Ath, the band playing, a huge procession of inhabitants intermingled with the troops, the Belgian National Anthem and the Marseillaise *ad infinitum* and (but only whisper it) *ad nauseam*. The whole Battalion was billeted in a large chair factory, evidently used by the Germans as a bakery and transport park, for there were dozens of their field cookers left derelict. The place was large enough for all the Transport. men, horses, wagons, and Stores, for all the machinery had been taken out.

Fighting was now over, and there was a distinct feeling of relief, mingled in many minds with misgivings that the enemy was being let off too lightly, and that an Armistice should not have been concluded till he was driven out of Belgium.

The 12th was given up to resting, but the inhabitants continued in gala mood, and followed the band in its daily visits to the square, singing and dancing. A curious sight was to be seen in Ath, in those early days after the arrival of the British. Every morning women and girls were to be seen vigorously cleaning the pavement and half the road in front of their houses. It appears that the Germans had insisted on this daily cleaning of the streets, but the custom gradually died out after their departure, the British being indifferent to such a form of sanitation, but much more particular about other nuisances. On Wednesday, the 13th, British prisoners of war began to arrive, having escaped from or been released by the enemy as they retired. Most of them had walked back from Hal and Enghien, arriving first in twos and threes, then in larger batches, but always hungry and exhausted Probably the first to arrive were a few 1/5th King's Own men taken prisoners in April. These were easily dealt with, even to the extent of discarding their horrible civilian clothing and being given new uniforms. But as the night wore on and the numbers increased, it became a matter of some difficulty in finding them shelter. However, a large building was obtained. straw was forthcoming, the Boche cookers were brought round, Battalion cooks set to work, a lorry turned up with food, and by morning all was well. By mid-day on the 14th the number had reached 400, and a Town Major having been appointed in Ath, the Battalion was relieved of its unexpected responsibility. The tales told by these prisoners, new from the hands of the Germans, set men's blood boiling,

Digitized by Google

and it was well that the enemy was now well on his way to Germany.

Meanwhile the Battalion continued to enjoy itself, the band played to the inhabitants in the square, and the men played football whenever and wherever possible. The forms of war were not yet over, however, and at the point reached by the furthest outposts on Armistice Day, outposts still stood guard, until the period allowed for the enemy to retire should have expired. On November 15th, therefore, the Battalion took its turn in the outpost line, the Battalion, with all Transport and Stores, moving to Attre and neighbourhood. On the way a short halt was made while the Brigadier spoke to the men about the situation, particularly referring to the smart work at "Mystery House," and giving a short outline of the coming demobilisation.

Two companies took over the outpost line, with two companies, H.Q., Transport, etc., in the village. On Sunday, the 17th, the Cavalry Corps passed through the outpost line, which was withdrawn in the evening, and next day the whole Battalion moved back to Villers St. Amand, having dinner at Ath on the way. It soon became evident what the programme was to be next. All supplies in the hurried advance had been brought up in relays of motor lorries, as the railways had been effectively destroyed by the enemy in his retreat. The strain on these lorries had almost got to breaking point, as many were put out of action owing to the broken up roads. It became imperative, therefore, to re-establish the railways, and every available man was put on. First the buried mines had to be removed or rendered harmless, bridges had to be rebuilt, the permanent way relaid, and new lines laid down. It speaks well for the energy displayed that a single line was completed by the end of the month, and everybody saw the first train pass towards Brussels with the greatest satisfaction. This urgent work did not prevent recreation, the companies off duty after training in the morning taking part in football, boxing and running in the afternoons. The Brigadier, General Kentish, had begun Divisional Football, Boxing and Running Competitions. The 166th Brigade took up the scheme with great enthusiasm, the result being a great flourish of sporting finals at Brussels early in 1919.

Dances and concerts were held in the H.Q. Chateau, the village belles taking part, till their jealous beaux, who were not

Digitized by Google

invited, caused dissension, so to prevent bad blood the dances had to be discontinued. So far it had been understood that as soon as the railway was open, the Division was to proceed to Germany, but on November 23rd it was announced, much to the disappointment of all, that the 55th Division was out of the running. On Sunday, November 24th, the massed bands of the Division played in the square at Ath, and next day the new Education Scheme was started in the Convent School. There were only two professional teachers, in addition to the Colonel, amongst the officers, but other officers manfully came forward, and the Battalion carried on without outside assistance under the able management of Second Lieutenant Arnison. The Brigade Boxing Final took place on November 28th, the points being, 1/10th Liverpool Scottish, 42½; 1/5th King's Own, 41; 1/5th South Lancs., 17.

At the beginning of December it was known that the Division was going to Brussels, and a (practice) route march with packs was held on December 3rd. The officers and sergeants held a dance at the Chateau on the 4th, and "D" Company a whist drive on the 5th. On Friday, December 6th, Captain Briggs left to bring out the Battalion Colours. On the 7th the Division was reviewed informally by the King on the main Ath-Leuze Road, the King and the Prince of Wales leaving their car and walking through the cheering ranks.

Inter-platoon football was started on December 8th, and this continued right through to February, when it died out owing to demobilisation. The band gave a delightful concert in the Chateau the same night. Saturday, 14th, was polling day for the General Election, and preparations were made for the departure to Brussels next morning.

Digitized by Google

Chapter XVII.

BRUSSELS.

December, 1918, to March, 1919.

THE route to Brussels lay through Ath, where dinners were taken, to Prairie, where the Battalion billeted for the night. Next day the march was continued to Wisbecq, and on the following day, the 17th, the Battalion arrived at Chaussee de Waterloo, a suburb of Brussels, after a long and tiring march. The billets were good, and everybody settled down to have a good time. H.Q. and the Stores were in a large chateau, " B," " C " and " D " Companies on the main road to Waterloo, " A " Company in empty houses behind the chateau, the Sergeants' Mess in a beautifully furnished house near the chateau, and the Officers' Mess in Villa Lorraine, of the Hotel Pension variety.

The main drawback was the lack of adequate washing, and the sanitation, but these defects were gradually overcome. Two rooms in the chateau were set apart for the Education Classes, and the pioneers set about making desks, the timber coming from an old Boche dump at Ruysbroeck near Brussels. Till these desks were ready, a school in the neighbouring suburb of St. Job was used. Gentle training was carried out, but the two main ideas were games and demobilisation. Brussels was a great attraction, being only six kilometres away by free tram cars. The high prices, however, had a deterrent effect on too frequent visits. The Brussels Racing Club Football Ground was behind the chateau, and here the first of many matches was played, the 166th Brigade against the Brussels Club. By December 23rd preparations were well in hand for the Christmas dinner. Each company had secured a suitable hall with convenient cooking arrangements. The weather was dull with occasional rain and snow, but football was continued and the cross-country running team, under Captain Bennett, carried out its training. The morning of the 25th was spent in decorating

Digitized by Google

the various dining halls, and at 12.30 a sumptuous repast of turkey, plum pudding, etc., was thoroughly enjoyed. It is worthy of note that at the first Christmas dinner at Sevenoaks in 1914 and the last at Brussels in 1918, turkeys were roasted whole, while at the three intermediate dinners in 1915, 1916 and 1917 turkeys were received in tins. On this occasion the officers and Sergeants waited on the men, and had their Christmas dinner in the evening. The Battalion Concert Party, under Second Lieutenant Praed, gave a performance in the afternoon at the Brasserie, and at night everybody seemed to go to Brussels.

Football and school alternated during the next few days, the numbers of the Battalion rapidly decreasing owing to demobilisation. On December 31st Captain Bennett's cross-country team beat the Liverpool Scottish in the Brigade Run, and so added another cup to the Battalion collection. On January 3rd, the anniversary of the formation of the Division in 1916, the Division was inspected by the King of the Belgians in the Bois de Cambre. Lord Derby was also present. The Battalion cross-country team scored another success at the Hippodrome on the 9th, winning the Divisional Cup, which was presented to Captain Bennett by General Birdwood, then the 5th Army Commander.

The Divisional Boxing Tournament began on January 17th at the Palais d'Etè, Brussels. The Battalion made a good start, and it was soon seen that the issue lay between the King's Own and the Scottish. Next day the result was still in doubt, but the third day, Monday, January 20th, the Scottish won the first place and the Major-General's Cup, with the 1/5th King's Own a good second, winning the Divisional Officers' Cup. Sergeant Wright received a medal as the winner of the welter weights, and Sergeant Barnes also received a medal as the runner up of the heavy weights.

On the previous evening the Sergeants gave a most enjoyable dance at the Skating Rink. It was now becoming difficult to raise teams for the inter-platoon football competition, so it was decided to have a knock-out competition. Frost intervened, and as demobilisation continued, football lapsed. The Racing Club Ground, however, was always a centre of attraction, and there on January 22nd the 166th Brigade H.Q. beat the R.F.A. 1—0 in the Divisional Championship. The same night the King's Own officers entertained the Major-General, the Brigadier and other officers at mess

Digitized by Google

Frost at the end of January caused a suspension of all football for a time, only a few vital games being attempted.

A most enjoyable lecture on R. L. Stevenson was given on January 25th by Rev. Greenland. When it is pointed out that attendance was voluntary, that the lecture took place at 9.30 a.m. in a rather cold room on a frosty morning, it will be understood that it must have been " some " lecture, to rivet attention as it did.

Representative detachments of the 3rd Corps marched past the King of the Belgians on the 26th. The Prince of Wales and Prince Albert were present. The 164th Brigade marched and the 166th Brigade lined the route. Snow fell most of the time, but the standing troops gained a little warmth when the field cookers went hurriedly along the line with hot tea just before the head of the column arrived.

On January 28th it was announced that the 1/5th King's Own had won the Major-General's Cup for the best Transport in the Division. In previous competitions there had been much preparation and a certain amount of " eye wash." This competition was decided on points given by the Major-General during surprise visits to the various Transport lines.

On February 1st the C.O. gave a lecture on Bolshevism. At this time there was a rather uneasy feeling that the hated creed was spreading amongst the Belgians.

Although the Battalion was disappointed when the move to Germany was cancelled, there were few volunteers for a draft of five officers and 100 men to join the 8th King's Own in the Army of Occupation. The numbers were therefore made up of retainable men, but it will be seen later why the draft never went. The frost still continued, and interest for the moment centred in boxing. The Divisional Boxing Team had been attached to the 1/5th King's Own during training, and on February 11th proceeded to Lille to take part in the Fifth Army Boxing Competition. In the result the Divisional officers came first in their class, the " other ranks " came fourth in theirs, and Second Lieutenant Adams (1/5th King's Own) was the winner of the officers' welter weights. On the same day, February 15th, five R.A.F. officers (South Africans), part of a Rugby team touring the country, were attached to the mess. In the 3rd Corps Cross-Country Run on February 16th. the Battalion team came in second with the Liverpool Scottish fourth. Demobilisation now

Digitized by Google

caused the Battalion to withdraw from Rubgy football. Education Classes, however, still carried on, but it was becoming difficult to find men to carry out the necessary duties. On Monday, February 24th, it was announced that the 1/5th King's Own and the Liverpool Scottish were to go to Antwerp at the week end. The Scottish at this time were having a tough struggle with the 6th Camerons of the 8th Division for supremacy in the 5th Army Association Final. After two drawn games the Scottish managed to win. At the week end the Scottish went to Antwerp, leaving their football team under the care of the King's Own, whose move was first postponed and then cancelled. Brussels being such an excellent centre for football, it was decided to play off the 5th Army Competition there, and the teams from divisions in the 5th Army were attached to the King's Own while the competition lasted. This was rendered possible as many billets were available owing to demobilisation. The Battalion now consisted of its full strength of officers, about 100 retainable men, and 100 demobilisable men, 50 of whom were wanted for the cadre.

On February 27th the Battalion team again came in second in the 5th Army cross-country run at Lille. By Friday, the 28th, five football teams had arrived, consisting of 13 officers and 97 other ranks. The resources of the Officers' Mess were taxed almost to breaking point, but Villa Lorraine stood the strain. On Sunday, March 2nd, the 1st Army were beaten by the Belgians on the Leopold Ground by 5 to nil, and on March 3rd the 5th Army Competitions began. The 8th Division M.G.C. won on the Racing Club Ground, and the 159th R.F.A. on the Leopold Ground. The next day there was no football owing to rain. On the 5th the 74th Division beat the South African Signals on the Racing Club Ground by 3—2. On the same day Brigadier-General Kentish once more taxed the resources of the King's Own by attaching Rugby teams from the 5th Army. On the 7th the Association Semi-Finals were played.

The 8th M.G.C. beat the 74th R.E.'s 1—0 (Racing Club).

The 159th R.F.A. beat the 55th Division (Liverpool Scots) 3—2 (Leopold Club).

On Sunday, March 9th, an international match took place on the Racing Club Ground between France and Belgium. It ended in a draw, 2—2. The final for the 5th Army Association

Digitized by Google

Championship was played on March 10th, the 159th R.F.A. eventually being the winners.

It was definitely announced on March 12th that the Battalion was selected for the Army of Occupation, and though orders were again received for the Battalion to go to Antwerp, these were again cancelled, and while the Battalion was receiving drafts, football continued. Before the 5th Army Final was played, Army teams began to arrive from France, Belgium and Germany, the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th, and 5th Armies, and the Lines of Communication and Tanks, six teams in all. In addition, the Brigadier wanted the B.E.F. team of cross-country runners to train under his eyes, and they also were attached to the King's Own.

On Friday, March 14th, the first draft arrived, consisting of one officer and 65 other ranks from the 2/5th King's Own, and three days later six officers and 180 other ranks arrived from the 1st King's Own. There was no definite competition amongst the Army teams, but many games were played to select the best men for the B.E.F. team. A Possibles versus Probables match was played on Sunday, 23rd. Next day the 2nd Army beat the 3rd Army 7—2. On the 25th a draft of 15 men arrived from the 1st King's Own. On Wednesday, 26th, the 1st Army beat the 2nd Army 4—0. On the 28th the last batch of 52 men left for demobilisation, and the Battalion was warned to move to Germany on April 1st. During these last few days other drafts arrived, including 129 from the 15th Loyal North Lancs. and 52 from the 2/5th King's Own. The Battalion was now 30 officers and 600 other ranks strong, and to accommodate these and the Army teams billets had to be occupied in St. Job.

On Saturday, March 29th, the B.E.F. team left for Paris, and there only remained about 40 cross-country runners, and a small party under an officer was left behind to look after these. The two last drafts, 95 men, arrived on March 31st.

Digitized by Google

Chapter XVIII.

GERMANY.

April-September, 1919.

ON April 1st the Battalion entrained at Ruysbroek. A billeting party had gone forward to Euskirchen on March 30th, but on arrival there found that there was no room, and eventually found billets at Schleiden, 40 kilos away. The Battalion on arrival at Euskirchen in the early hours of April 2nd, therefore, found no billeting party, but some information was obtained from the R.T.O.'s Clerk, and a visit to IX Corps H.Q. brought further news. We were to go to Schleiden temporarily, but as the Army Signalling School was taking over the place we should soon have to leave. The Battalion was all this time waiting in the train, and as there seemed to be no immediate hurry, the cookers were set going on the trucks as they stood, and breakfast was obtained. The engine was then hooked on, and back the train went to Call. Here more refreshments at the Y.M.C.A. and the train then took the branch line to Schleiden. The reception of the Rhine Army was a decided damper, but as Schleiden was a nice place, and nobody seemed to want us, we all settled down to enjoy ourselves till somebody should tell us what we had come for. The IXth Corps obliged with rations, and eventually, after some persuasion, with other things. At last it transpired that the Battalion was under the Provost Branch of the Army Troops, which explained why IXth Corps was so reluctant to own it. A company of a Welsh battalion were in the same village, and football matches were soon arranged with them. There being not much in the way of training ground the Battalion, now 750 strong, mostly went on route marches to view the surrounding country, which was decidedly worth seeing. There was little else to do, as the Welsh kept the inhabitants in order. This went on till Thursday, April 24th, when "A" and "D" Companies left by motor lorries to take over frontier duties on

Digitized by Google

the German-Belgian frontier, relieving a company of the K.O.Y.L.I.'s and a company of the Oxford and Bucks Light Infantry. " A " Company H.Q. were at St. Vith, and " D " Company's at Malmedy. Their duties were to examine all passes and prevent smuggling. For this purpose examining posts were established on all the roads crossing the frontier, with patrols for the intervening spaces. There would be about 20 of these posts covering a distance of about 90 kilometres, but as the roads to these posts wound in and out, the officers in charge had long journeys by box cars on their periodical visits. The companies were entirely left to their own resources, and obtained their rations and delivered them by motor lorries. H.Q. at Schleiden were not an easy reach, although all supplies except rations had to come from Schleiden. This necessitated frequent visits by the company box cars to Schleiden. The inhabitants were mostly well behaved, and the men on the posts, lonely and isolated as they were, were not at all anxious to be relieved, as the freedom from irksome discipline, and the free open air life greatly suited them. Sports materials were shared out amongst the posts, and time never seemed to hang heavy on their hands.

On May 5th one officer and 31 other ranks left Schleiden to take over police duties at the railway stations at Cologne, Bonn, Herbesthall and intermediate stations. Another officer and 80 other ranks left on June 1st to take up similar duties under the Area Commandant at Hellenthall. On Friday, June 6th, the Battalion was greatly pleased to find Lieutenant-Colonel E. G. Hoare awarded the D.S.O. in the Birthday Honours. On June 12th the remainder of the available men left for various duties.

" B " Company, two officers and 80 other ranks to Area Commandant, Malmedy.

" C " Company, one officer and 80 other ranks to Area Commandant, Montjoie.

H.Q. on the same day moved to Urft on the Cologne-Paris main line, where they were more easily accessible to their now very much scattered troops, for there were now men of the 1/5th King's Own in practically every corner of the Rhine Army Area. At Urft a further draft of 30 men was got together and sent to Cologne.

Urft was only a small village surrounded by well wooded hills, but the time passed pleasantly. In the intervals when the

Digitized by Google

various needs of the scattered detachments had been met, cricket, football and excellent fishing were enjoyed, and sports were held on June 30th to celebrate the signing of peace on the 28th. On July 9th Major B. H. Purdon of the Munsters joined as Second in Command, Major Marshall having been left at Brussels prior to his joining the Russian Expeditionary Force.

The men went in turn to Cologne and some went to Bonn to take the steamers up the Rhine as far as Coblenz. Many also visited the remarkable circus organised by the 1st Division of the American Army at Cologne on August 2nd. Towards the end of August " A " and " D " Companies had to move their frontier posts, as the Peace Treaty gave part of the Malmedy Area to the Belgians. They had hardly got settled in their new positions when orders came for the Battalion to concentrate, preparatory to leaving for home.

Digitized by Google

Chapter XIX.

HOME AT LAST.

October, 1919.

THE concentration took place at Call on August 30th and 31st, and on Wednesday, September 3rd, the Battalion entrained at Call, having previously sent the animals to Cologne and all mobilisation equipment and wagons to Antwerp for transfer to England. A long slow journey in the train at last ended at 5.30 a.m. on September 5th at Calais. Here the Battalion embarked and reached Dover at mid-day. One night at Dover and the next day by train to Holyhead, with a stop at Northampton for dinner. Again embarked at 2.40 a.m. on the 7th, arrived Dublin 7 a.m., left Dublin 11 a.m. by train and arrived at French Furze Camp, the Curragh, about noon. The camp had been empty for quite a long time, and was in a bad state of repair. As, however, demobilisation went on rapidly, the state of things was endured stoically, and in spite of the railway strike in England, the last batch for demobilisation left early in October. N.C.O.'s and men not due for demobilisation joined the 1st King's Own in Dublin, and the whole of the officers also went for demobilisation except the Colonel, Adjutant, Quartermaster, Captain Bennett and Second Lieutenant Aldersley, whose duties were not complete. Ten N.C.O.'s and men who were retainable were kept back as a cadre, and those and the above mentioned officers left the Curragh on October 15th, crossed the same night to Holyhead, left early next morning for Lancaster, and received a hearty civic welcome at the Town Hall. Captain Briggs, who with a party of the original men of the Battalion joined the cadre at the station, carried the Colours along with Captain Bennett. The two mascots, Johnny and Joey, the first a white pony given by the 2nd Battalion, and the second an Indian mule

Digitized by Google

found at Ypres in 1915, also joined the procession, and a strong guard of honour was provided at the Town Hall by a detachment from the Depot at Bowerham Barracks.

Thus ended the honourable career of the 1/5th King's Own. The 2/5th King's Own has likewise vanished, and in their stead will rise a new 5th King's Own to carry on and maintain the traditions of a noble regiment.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX I.

COMMANDING OFFICERS (In the Field).

Lieut.-Col. Lord Richard Cavendish, C.B., C.M.G. (also before mobilisation)	February to May, 1915.
Capt. G. W. Sharpe	May, 1915.
Capt. F. Eaves	May to June, 1915.
Major E. C. Cadman, D.S.O.... ...	June to October, 1915.
Lieut.-Col. F. Eaves, D.S.O.	October, 1915, to June, 1916.
Lieut.-Col. C. A. W. Anderson ...	June to September, 1916.
Lieut.-Col. R. H. Anderson-Morshead	September, 1916, to June, 1917.
Lieut.-Col. A. B. Wayte, D.S.O. ...	June, 1917, to May, 1918.
Lieut.-Col. E. G. Hoare, D.S.O. ...	May, 1918, to October, 1919.

SECONDS IN COMMAND.

Major J. H. Bates (also before mobilisation)	February to May, 1915.
Major W. Fawcett	October, 1915, to June, 1916.
Major R. H. Anderson-Morshead ...	June to September, 1916.
Major E. Atkinson	September to November, 1916.
Major G. C. Milnes, M.C.	November, 1916, to June, 1917.
Major J. D. Johnstone	June to November, 1917.
Major F. W. Heath	January to February, 1918.
Major W. M. Phillips	February to April, 1918.
Major C. C. Marshall, D.S.O. ...	July, 1918, to April, 1919.
Major B. H. Purdon, M.C.	July to September, 1919.

ADJUTANTS.

Capt. J. M. Young (also before mobilisation)	February to May, 1915.
Lieut. G. C. Milnes	May, 1915, to November, 1916.
Lieut. W. S. Macfarlane	September, 1916, to August, 1917.
Lieut. H. R. Hart	August to November, 1917.
Lieut. T. S. Blakeley	November, 1917, to January, 1918.
Capt. H. R. Hart	January to November, 1918.
Capt. A. H. Turner	November, 1918, to October, 1919.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX II.

HONOURS AND AWARDS.

C.M.G.

Lieut.-Col. Lord Richard Cavendish	23	6	15

D.S.O.

Lieut.-Col. Frederick Eaves	3	6	16
Lieut.-Col. A. B. Wayte	1	1	18
Lieut.-Col. E. G. Hoare	7	6	19

Military Cross.

Lieut. T. C. Owtram	15	4	16
Lieut. W. A. Wolfendale	15	4	16
Sec. Lieut. W. S. Macfarlane	20	10	16
Sec. Lieut. T. S. Blakeley	1	1	17
Sec. Lieut. R. Macdonald	26	4	17
Lieut. R. Macdonald (bar)	26	9	17
Lieut. R. Macdonald (second bar)	16	9	18
Capt. W. Harriss	4	6	17
Capt. G. C. Milnes	26	9	17
Sec. Lieut. G. H. Lord	26	9	17
Capt. H. B. Bennett	26	11	17
Lieut. H. P. Forshaw	26	11	17
Capt. H. P. Forshaw (bar)	16	9	18
Sec. Lieut. W. H. Metcalfe	26	11	17
Capt. W. H. Metcalfe (bar)	16	9	18
R.S.M. H. A. Pobgee	26	11	17
Lieut. F. B. Elwood, R.A.M.C.	20	1	18
Capt. H. Bell	3	6	18
Sec. Lieut. H. Carless	15	10	18
Sec. Lieut. J. Alexander	16	9	18
Sec. Lieut. W. T. Yare	23	11	18
Capt. H. R. Hart	24	12	18
Lieut. N. G. Hill	15	10	18
Lieut. N. G. Hill (bar)	24	12	18

Promotion by Royal Warrant.

Hon. Lieut. A. Hodgkinson to be Hon. Capt.	3	6	16

D.C.M.

Corpl. E. L. Bennett	15	4	16
Pte. W. Gibson	15	4	16
Sergt. W. Lynch	15	4	16
Corpl. E. J. Lidford	15	4	16
Pte. S. E. Palin	15	4	16
Sergt. A. Price	15	4	16
Pte. R. W. Veevers	15	4	16
Sergt. T. Huartson	26	4	17
Sergt. J. Macdonald	22	10	17
Sergt. F. Hewitt	3	6	19

Digitized by Google

Military Medal.

Lce.-Corpl. W. Angus.
Lce.-Corpl. J. Ashcroft.
Sergt. T. Atkinson.
Pte. W. Ayling.
Sergt. W. Bell.
Pte. F. Brear.
Sergt. F. W. Ball (and bar).
Pte. H. Brewer.
Pte. J. Bettany.
Pte. W. Buckley.
Lce.-Corpl. C. Banning.
Sergt. J. Barnes.
Lce.-Corpl. E. Bradbury.
Pte. J. Baines.
Pte. F. Binsall.
Lce.-Corpl. T. Broxholme.
Lce.-Corpl. G. Carradice.
Pte. G. Chuchman.
Pte. J. Clair.
Pte. W. Cullen.
Sergt. G. E. Campbell.
Lce.-Sergt. H. B. Dobson.
Corpl. L. H. Dickinson.
Pte. J. Dawson.
Pte. W. Doyle.
Pte. W. T. Edgar.
Lce.-Corpl. W. Fisher.
C.Q.M.S. E. Grindrod.
Lce.-Corpl. A. Gray.
Sergt. S. Heaton.
Lce.-Corpl. E. Hedges.
Sergt. M. Hughes.
Pte. W. A. Huntriss.
Sergt. D. Harris.
Pte. T. Hodgson.
Pte. W. R. Hunter.
Pte. J. Hall.
Pte. G. Hazel.
Pte. F. Harrison.
Lce.-Corpl. F. Hartley.
Sergt. R. N. Jackson.
Lce.-Corpl. F. Jones.
Sergt. J. Kilbride.
Sergt. O. King.
Pte. T. Kirkby.
Pte. J. Knaggs.
Pte. E. Knox.
Lce.-Corpl. W. C. Livesey.
Lce.-Corpl. S. Law.
Corpl. H. G. Large.
Lce.-Corpl. Marland.
Lce.-Corpl. G. Mawson.
Pte. E. Mann.
Pte. A. G. Murray.
Sergt. T. Mackereth.
Pte. T. Neiles.
Pte. T. Nisbett.
Corpl. J. Newby.
Pte. E. C. Nicholls.
C.Q.M.S. W. Newton.
Pte. C. L. Newman.
Corpl. W. Parker.
Corpl. A. Parkinson.
Pte. I. Phillipson.
Sergt. W. Prickett.
Lce.-Sergt. R. Peel.
Pte. S. Rowlinson.
Sergt. W. Rigden.
Corpl. E. Rimmer.
Pte. A. Roskell.
Sergt. P. Roy.
Sergt. A. J. Swann.
Sergt. T. Sanderson.
Lce.-Corpl. A. E. Smallshaw.
Lce.-Corpl. Omar Steel.
Pte. W. Thompson.
Lce.-Corpl. H. Tattersall.
Sergt. S. Taylor.
Pte. C. Taylor.
Lce.-Corpl. W. Winder.
C.Q.M.S. A. Wilson.
Lce.-Corpl. J. Wright.
Sergt. J. R. Wright.
Pte. J. Woodhall.
Pte. G. Walters.
Sergt. T. Wilkinson.
Sergt. S. Yaylor.

Digitized by Google

Meritorious Service Medal.

Pte. M. Newton.
Sergt. R. S. Brockbank.
R.Q.M.S. W. C. Herridge.
Sergt. J. Birtle.
R.Q.M.S. E. Grindrod.
Sergt. A. Holt.
Sergt. R. W. Clarkson.
Sergt. F. Barnett.
Pte. H. Walton.
Q.M.S. T. Wolfenden.
Sergt. R. Hyde.

Cross of St. George, Fourth Class.

Sergt. W. Lynch 28 2 17

Decoration Militaire (Belgique).

Lance-Corpl. H. Boustead 15 4 18

Rumanian Croix de Virtute Militara, Second Class.

C.S.M. J. Denwood 17 3 19

Mentioned in Despatches.

Officers.

Lieut.-Col. Lord Richard Cavendish, C.M.G.
Major F. Eaves, D.S.O. (twice).
Major G. C. Milnes, M.C. (three times).
Sec. Lieut. W. A. Wolfendale.
Capt. W. N. Briggs.
Sec. Lieut. J. Gilchrist.
Capt. A. Hodgkinson (three times).
Lieut.-Col. E. C. Cadman.
Capt. H. Bell, M.C. (twice).
Sec. Lieut. W. E. Baker.
Sec. Lieut. J. W. Gardner.
Sec. Lieut. H. V. Tringham.
Sec. Lieut. J. H. Baird.
Lieut.-Col. E. G. Hoare, D.S.O.
Sec. Lieut. E. W. Sleight.
Capt. A. H. Turner.
Lieut.-Col. A. B. Wayte, D.S.O.

N.C.O.'s and Men.

Sergt. R. Wallbank.
Sergt. R. N. Jackson.
C.S.M. G. Haywood.
Sergt. R. Barton
C.S.M. J. Robinson.
Pte. E. Osman.
Pte. W. H. Allen.
Sergt. V. J. Roy.
Pte. G. Powell.
Pte. C. Cotton.
Pte. J. Dawson.
C.S.M. G. B. Barrow
R.Q.M.S. T. Byrne.
Corpl. J. Wilson.
Lce.-Corpl. A. G. Hartell.
Corpl. W. Pothecary.
Pte. E. Knox.
Pte. H. Walton.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX III.

CASUALTIES.	Officers.	N.C.O.'s and men.	Total.
Killed or died of wounds ...	27	537	564
Wounded	80	1609	1689
Missing	18	303	321
Sick	102	2267	2369
Total	227	4716	4943

NOTE.—In the above numbers officers, N.C.O.'s and men who were wounded or sick more than once are included for each occasion. The "missing" have since been accounted for as "killed or died of wounds," or as "prisoners of war."

APPENDIX IV.

OFFICERS WHO WENT OUT WITH THE BATTALION.

Lieut.-Col. Lord Richard Cavendish
Major J. H. Bates ... ... Second in Command.
Major E. C. Cadman ... ... O.C. "D" Company
Capt. J. M. Young ... ... Adjutant.
Capt. E. Atkinson ... ... O.C. "A" Company.
Capt. G. W. Sharpe ... ... O.C. "B" Company.
Capt. F. Eaves ... ... O.C. "C" Company.
Capt. W. Fawcett
Capt. F. M. Bingham
Capt. W. J. Parsons
Capt. W. A. R. Carter
Capt. C. V. M. Simpson
Capt. W. R. W. Deed
Lieut. R. J. H. Preston
Lieut. E. M. Lloyd Evans
Lieut. G. C. Milnes ... ... Machine Gun Officer.
Lieut. A. S. Seward
Lieut. H. Coupland
Lieut. S. K. Bates
Lieut. W. N. Briggs
Lieut. T. C. Owtram
Sec. Lieut. H. Bell ... ... Transport Officer.
Sec. Lieut. C. H. Hinton
Sec. Lieut. R. Gardner
Sec. Lieut. G. Kirk
Sec. Lieut. J. A. Parkinson
Sec. Lieut. C. Saer.
Sec. Lieut. F. D. Huntingdon
Sec. Lieut. W. A. Wolfendale
Lieut. A. Hodgkinson ... ... Quartermaster.
Lieut. W. George, R.A.M.C. ... Medical Officer.

The following officers went out with the Battalion as N.C.O.'s and were granted commissions in the field—28 5 16.

Sec. Lieut. R. Irving. Sec. Lieut. T. S. Blakeley.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX V.

OFFICERS.

Killed and Died of Wounds.

ANDERSON, Lieut.-Col. C. A. W.	K. in A.	18 9 16
ADIE, Sec. Lieut. A. H....	K. in A.	3 5 18
BARROW, Lieut. S. E.	D. of W.	15 11 15
BATES, Lieut. S. K.	K. in A.	9 5 15
BINGHAM, Capt. F. M.	K. in A.	22 5 15
BRASH, Sec. Lieut. W.	K. in A.	9 3 17
CARTER, Capt. W. A. R....	K. in A.	23 4 15
CARR, Lieut. E. J. A.	D. of W.	18 5 15
COUPLAND, Lieut. H.	D. of W.	24 4 15
DEACON, Lieut. W. W., M.C.	K. in A.	22 8 18
DEIGHTON, Lieut. J., R.A.M.C.	D. of W.	19 9 16
DICKSON, Sec. Lieut. A.	Acc.Killed	14 10 16
DUXBURY, Sec. Lieut. A.	K. in A.	9 4 18
EVANS, Capt. E. M. L.	K. in A.	14 3 16
GARDNER, Sec. Lieut. R.	K. in A.	31 7 17
GREGG, Sec. Lieut. C. E.	K. in A.	15 6 17
HAMILTON, Lieut. N. B....	K. in A.	23 7 18
HAY, Sec. Lieut. J. D.	D. of W.	15 12 17
HENDERSON, Sec. Lieut. J. G. ... P.O.W.	D. of W.	2 12 17
HIGGINSON, Sec. Lieut. R.	K. in A.	15 8 16
IRVING, Sec. Lieut. R.	K. in A.	2 8 16
KEAN, Act. Capt. J. H.	K. in A.	1 12 17
KIRK, Sec. Lieut. G.	D. of W.	24 4 15
PARSONS, Capt. W. J. ... ... Died on Home Service		27 10 18
PRICE, Sec. Lieut. J. T.	K. in A.	27 5 18 (on or since)
PINCH, Sec. Lieut. W.	K. in A.	31 7 17
ROPER, Capt. W. E.	K. in A.	31 7 17
ROBERTSON, Act. Capt. W. D.	K. in A.	28 7 17
SALTER, Sec. Lieut. J. H. C.	K. in A.	9 4 18
SIMPSON, Capt. C. V. M.	K. in A.	31 7 17
TOOVEY, Sec. Lieut. K. St. C. H. ...P.O.W.	Died	13 10 18
TUCKER, Sec. Lieut. C. F.	K. in A.	9 4 18
WALKER, Sec. Lieut. J. B.	D. of W.	8 3 18
WOODWARD, Sec. Lieut. R. R....	K. in A.	1 12 17

Digitized by Google

260013	ADAMS, Cecil	Pte.	...	...	Brightlingsea, Essex	...	K. in A.	31	7	17
2069	ADAMS, Edward	Pte.	...	...	St. Peter's, Lancaster	...	K. in A.	23	4	15
3791	ACTON, Jonathan	Cpl.	...	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	15	8	16
240195	AIREY, Arthur Richard	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	19	6	17
3334	AIREY, Joshua	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	18	8	16
2446	AIREY, James Atkinson	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	4	5	15
242516	ALCOCK, Arthur	Pte.	...	...	Wolstanton, Staffs.	...	K. in A.	31	7	17
2066	ALDERSON, Edmund Irving	Pte.	...	...	Hornby, Lancs. ...	...	K. in A.	18	9	16
33953	ALLEN, Arthur...	Pte.	...	...	Morecambe ...	...	K. in A.	6	8	18
3044	ALSTON, Richard	Pte.	...	...	Glasson Dock ...	...	K. in A.	4	3	15
1471	AMBLER, Edmund	Pte.	...	...	Blackpool	...	K. in A.	9	5	15
1424	ANDERSON, Alban	Pte.	...	...	St. John's, Blackpool	...	D. of W.	10	8	15
32568	ANSELL, Charles Edmund	Lce.-Sgt...	...		New Ferry, Cheshire	...	D. of W.	27	4	18
5599	ARCHER, Walter	Pte.	...	...	Preston	...	K. in A.	15	9	17
240974	ARMISTEAD, Walter	Pte.	...	...	Morecambe... ...	...	K. in A.	6	8	18
24517	ARMSTRONG, William	Pte.	...	...	Wigan	...	K. in A.	20	9	17
242994	ASHCROFT, Joseph	Lce.-Sgt.	M.M.		Stockport	...	K. in A.	20	9	17
2554	ASHCROFT, Thomas	Pte.	...	...	Fleetwood	...	D. of W.	2	6	15
2555	ASHTON, John	Pte.	...	...	Poulton-le-Fylde ...	...	K. in A.	9	5	15
1940	ASPDEN, Albert	Pte.	...	...	Chorley	...	D. of W.	25	5	15
1789	ASSIT, John	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	D. of W.	6	5	15
13704	ASTLEY, Fred	Pte.	...	...	St. Paul's, Royton	...	K. in A.	23	7	17
2067	AUGUST, Harry	Pte.	...	...	St. Peter's, Lancaster	...	K. in A.	31	5	15
242651	AYLING, William	Pte.	...	M.M.	Chichester, Sussex	...	D. of W.	19	3	18
242436	BAGLEY, Charles Sainsbury... ...	Pte.	...	...	Minehead, Somerset	...	D. of W.	29	10	17
1153	BAGOT, John	Pte.	...	...	St. John's, Lancaster	...	K. in A.	27	4	15
242539	BAILEY, Ernest	Pte.	...	...	Bishopston, Bristol	...	D. of W.	17	6	17
1503	BAILEY, Samuel	Pte.	...	...	Grimsby, Lincoln	...	K. in A.	8	5	15

Digitized by Google

242522	BAINBRIDGE, Manisty	Pte.		Ingleby, Greenhow, Yorks.	K. in A.	30	11	17
241416	BAINS, John	Pte. ...	M.M.	Carnforth	D. of W.	8	8	18
1870	BALDERSON, Thomas	Cpl.		Cumberland	K. in A.	27	9	16
1386	BALDERSTONE, George Edward ...	Pte.		Christchurch, Lancaster...	K. in A.	23	4	15
3014	BAMBER, Thomas	Pte.		Singleton, Lancaster ...	D. of W.	5	5	15
242523	BANCROFT, Allen	Pte.		Cullingworth, Yorks. ...	K. in A.	30	11	17
33854	BANNISTER, Joseph	Pte.		Walsall, Staffs.	K. in A.	9	4	18
202294	BARLOW, Frederick Percy	Pte.		Manchester	K. in A.	31	7	17
25248	BARNES, William Taylor	Pte.		Dalton-in-Furness ...	Died	7	4	17
200921	BARROW, Barnet	Lce.-Sgt.	M.M.	Ulverston	K. in A.	13	4	18
240011	BARROW, George Walter	R.S.M.		Lancaster	Died	26	1	19
17963	BAXENDALE, Wallace Royle ...	Pte.		Ardwick, Manchester ...	K. in A.	30	11	17
240893	BAYNES, George	Pte.		Morecambe	D. of W.	4	12	17
243017	BEARD, Willie...	Pte.		Glossop, Derbyshire ...	K. in A.	28	7	17
36513	BEAUMAN, John Henry	Pte.		Sunderland	D. of W.	25	8	18
384	BECK, Ernest	Pte.		Carnforth	D. of W.	27	4	15
1363	BECKETT, George	Pte.		St. Thomas, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	23	4	15
37732	BELL, Thomas Wilson	Lce.-Cpl... ...		Baggrow, Carlisle ...	K. in A.	23	4	18
35693	BELL, Joseph	Pte.		Ulverston	K. in A.	9	4	18
26686	BELL, James Harry	Pte.		Newchurch, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	30	11	17
41675	BELLABY, Noah Vivian	Pte.		Nottingham	D. of W.	8	8	18
21035	BENTAM, Ernest Dean	Pte.		Nelson, Lancs.	K. in A.	9	4	18
12234	BERTESTEIN, Henry	Pte.		Newton Heath, Mans. ...	K. in A.	30	11	17
1887	BIGLAND, Thomas	Pte.		Christchurch, Lancaster...	K. in A.	24	4	15
2560	BILSBOROUGH, James Charles ...	Pte.		Fleetwood	K. in A.	15	8	16
27360	BINGHAM, Joseph	Pte.		St. John's, Gainsborough	K. in A.	6	8	18
1592	BIRCHALL, Harry	Pte.		St. John's, Blackpool ...	K in A.	20	11	15
1839	BIRD, Frederick	Lce.-Cpl... ...		Everton, Liverpool ...	K. in A.	15	8	16

Digitized by Google

2073	BLACKHURST, Reginald	Pte.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	16	4	15
240079	BLAIR, Harry	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Montrose, Forfarshire ...	D. of W.	17	9	17
42897	BODEN, Arthur	Pte.	Broseley, Salop	K. in A.	3	5	18
3058	BOLTON, Tom	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	17
241376	BOND, Robert	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	30	11	17
2001	BOND, Seth	Pte.	Fleetwood	D. of W.	15	3	15
242521	BOON, Ernest...	Pte.	Stafford	D. of W.	18	3	17
265777	BOOTHWAY, Ernest	Pte.	Carlisle	K. in A.	10	4	18
2266	BOSTOCK, Alfred	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A	27	4	15
1518	BOWEN, Harry	Cpl.	St. Michael's, Collyhurst	K. in A.	4	5	15
242534	BOWERS, Harry	Pte.	Horbury Bridge, Yorks...	K. in A.	31	7	17
240277	BOWKER, Robert	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	K. in A.	18	4	17
3046	BOWMAN, John	Pte.	Forton, Lancs.	D. of W.	27	7	16
41687	BOX, Clifford	Pte.	Sedgeley, Staffs. ...	K. in A.	30	10	18
35589	BRACKENBURY, George	Pte.	Sheffield	K. in A.	10	7	18
26413	BRAME, Montague Frederick ...	Pte.	Forest Gate, Essex ...	D. of W.	15	4	18
1732	BRATHERTON, William Henry ...	Lce.-Cpl... ...	St. Thomas, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	27	4	15
740	BRAYSHAW, Cecil	Cpl.	Morecambe	K. in A.	9	5	15
2064	BREAR, Frank...	Pte.	Morecambe	K. in A.	18	9	16
241923	BROSTER, Sydney Allen	Pte.	Burton-on-Trent	K. in A.	18	8	16
38135	BROUGH, Richard James	Pte.	Barrow-in-Furness ...	D. of W.	25	7	18
42899	BUCKLEY, Boris Bramley	Pte.	Mosley, Cheshire ...	D. of W.	6	7	18
241624	BURROW, Thomas	Cpl.	Lancaster	K. in A.	30	11	17
1512	BURROW, Thomas	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Halton, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	23	4	15
240370	BURROWS, Henry Johnstone ...	Pte.	Overton, Lancs.	K. in A.	20	9	17
242987	BURROW, Harold	Pte.	Ulverston	K. in A.	14	4	16
30675	BURTON, Frank Roland	Act.-Cpl... ...	Enfield Town, Middlesex...	D. of W.	11	3	18
2653	BUTLER, Stanley	Pte.	Fleetwood	D. of W.	19	5	16

Digitized by Google

2651	BUTLER, Edward	Pte.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	28	4	15
242358	BUTTERWORTH, James Livesay ...	Pte.	Shaw, Lancs.	K. in A.	10	4	18
8864	BUTTERWORTH, John...	Lce.-Sgt... ...	St. Clement's, Rochdale...	K. in A.	2	8	17
1304	BUTTERWORTH, Hugh	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	8	8	15
1253	CALLOW, Edward	Pte.	Dalton, Lancs.	K. in A.	1	7	15
241659	CAMERON, John Gorton	Pte.	Lanarkshire	K. in A.	30	11	17
2012	CAMPBELL, John	Pte.	Walton, Liverpool ...	K. in A.	9	5	15
1559	CARDWELL, John William	Pte.	Blackpool	D. of W.	11	5	15
2097	CARRIS, Roland	Pte.	Scotforth, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	4	5	15
242306	CARR, James	Pte.	Leyland	K. in A.	16	8	16
22424	CARTER, Percy	Pte.	Warrington	K. in A.	3	10	18
907	CARTER, James William	Pte.	Keighley	K. in A.	4	5	15
1370	CARTER, Edward	Pte.	Clayton, Manchester ...	D. of W.	19	5	15
26069	CARTWRIGHT, Peter	Pte.	Middleton	K. in A.	30	11	17
241344	CASSON, Richard	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	30	11	17
2091	CATHCART, James	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	4	5	15
2093	CATHCART, George	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	15
260016	CHAPMAN, Albert Herbert	Pte.	St. Pancras...	K. in A.	30	11	17
243060	CHARNLEY, William	Pte.	Fleetwood	D. of W.	20	9	17
2566	CHARNLEY, Thomas	Pte.	Poulton, Lancs.	K. in A.	4	3	15
42902	CHIDGEY, Stanley	Pte.	Cardiff	K. in A.	10	7	18
27499	CHORLEY, William	Pte.	Ulverston	K. in A.	20	9	17
240099	CHURCHOUSE, James...	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	K. in A.	31	7	17
1003	CHURCHOUSE, John	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	14	4	15
242406	CLAPHAM, William	Cpl.	Lancaster	K. in A.	31	7	17
2740	CLARKE, Tom Knight	Pte.	Ulverston	K. in A.	14	4	15
242621	COAR, John Albert	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Burnley	D. of W.	27	4	18
242623	COCKER, John...	Pte.	Chorley	D. of W.	29	5	17

Digitized by Google

201871	COCKCROFT, Charles	Pte.	Bacup	K. in A.	30	11	17
32003	COLLINS, Charles	Pte.	Manchester	K. in A.	11	4	18
33914	COLSTON, Norman	Pte.	Blackpool	K. in A.	31	7	17
265562	CONNERTON, Joseph	Pte.	Kendal	K. in A.	30	11	17
1803	CONWAY, William	Pte.	Burnley	K. in A.	4	5	15
2086	COOK, Stephen	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	29	5	15
242659	COOPER, Frederick	Pte.	Chichester	K. in A.	9	3	17
1249	CORLESS, Robert	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	K. in A.	15	8	16
1975	COTTAM, Thomas	Pte.	Fleetwood	D. of W.	6	5	15
1552	COTTAM, Lawrence	Pte.	Sheffield	D. of W.	25	8	16
1808	CAVE, Alfred	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	4	8	16
1401	COWELL, John...	Pte.	York	D. of W	16	5	15
1767	CRAGG, Joseph...	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	23	4	15
1544	CRAHAN, John	Pte.	Widnes	D. of W.	15	7	16
20510	CREWE, William Leo	Pte.	Preston	D. of W.	25	4	18
2363	CROOK, Joseph	Pte.	Skerton	K. in A.	15	8	16
35788	CROOK, James...	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	12	4	18
1678	CROSS, James...	Pte.	Barrow	K. in A.	4	5	15
1613	CROSS, Harold	Pte.	Crewe	K. in A.	14	11	15
240725	CROSS, William	Sgt.	Preesall	Died	12	11	18
1805	CROSSLEY, John	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	1	7	15
5320	CROWTHER, James	Pte.	Blackpool	D. of W.	29	6	17
242449	CROWTHER, James	Pte.	Bury	D. of W.	29	6	17
21306	CUMMINGS, John	Pte.	Mossley	K. in A.	10	4	18
2467	CUNLIFFE, Robert	Pte.	Bamber Bridge	K. in A.	9	5	15
242301	CURWEN, Richard	Pte.	Preston	K. in A.	16	8	16
242540	DALEY, John	Pte.	Bury	K. in A.	30	11	17
240594	DAWSON, Robert	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	9	3	17

Digitized by Google

242624	DALTON, Joseph	Pte.	...	...	Blackburn	D. of W.	1	5	18
481	DALTON, Joseph	Pte.	...	...	Widnes, Lancs.	K. in A.	3	6	15
28660	DAVIES, Leonard Tom	Pte.	...	...	Gloucester	K. in A.	26	10	17
260033	DAVIES, Edward David	Pte.	...	...	Garston	K. in A.	21	9	17
2234	DAVIES, Dennett Howard	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	24	5	15
242703	DAVIS, John Henry	Pte.	...	...	Millom, Cumberland ...	K. in A.	9	4	18
3628	DAVIS, John	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	16	10	16
1248	DAWES, Albert Hartley	Sgt.	...	...	St. John's, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	27	5	15
242993	DAWSON, Douglas M.	Pte.	...	...	Cottingham, Hull ...	D. of W.	15	8	16
42910	DAY, George Henry	Pte.	...	...	Hereford	Died	2	4	19
37746	DEAN, Alfred, H.	Lce.-Cpl...		...	Liverpool	K. in A.	15	9	18
241424	DICKINSON, Lewis Harold	Sgt.	M.M.		Nelson	K. in A.	30	11	17
3414	DIXON, Joseph Livingstone ...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	4	5	15
240197	DOCKERTY, William	Lce.-Cpl...		...	St. Mary's, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	30	11	17
1009	DODGSON, John	Lce.-Cpl...		...	Pilling, Lancs.	D. of W.	10	5	15
3958	DODGSON, Robert	Pte.	...	...	St. Mary's, Lancaster ...	D. of W.	21	6	15
240244	DONOHUE, James	Cpl.	...	...	Blackpool	K. in A.	7	7	18
242965	DONOVAN, James	Cpl.	...	...	Preston	K. in A.	9	4	18
1945	DORAN, William Henry	Pte.	...	...	Christchurch, Blackpool...	K. in A.	11	8	16
24689	DOWNS, Thomas	Pte.	...	...	Bridnorth, Salop	D. of W.	2	12	17
3002	DOWTHWAITE, Harold Hector ...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	22	8	15
26035	DRISCOLL, Charles	Pte.	...	...	Ashton-under-Lyne ...	K. in A.	9	4	18
28019	DURHAM, Arthur	Pte.	...	...	Darlington	K. in A.	17	7	18
1332	EASTWOOD, Will	Pte.	...	...	Marton, Blackpool ...	Died	9	7	16
240154	EASTWOOD, Frederick	Sgt.	...	...	Blackpool	K. in A.	23	7	17
2852	EDMONDSON, Thomas	Pte.	...	...	Morecambe	D. of W.	15	8	16
33235	ELLIOTT, Fred	Pte.	...	...	Leeds	D. of W.	30	11	17
2104	ELTOFT, Fred	Pte.	...	...	Christchurch	K. in A.	16	4	15

Digitized by Google

33846	ELMSLEY, Frank	Pte.	...	...	Leeds	K. in A.	30	11	17
2105	ENGLISH, Clifford	Pte.	...	...	St. James, Spilsby ...	D. of W.	21	5	15
240056	ENTWISTLE, Charles	Pte.	...	...	Poulton-le-Fylde	K. in A.	31	7	17
6908	EVANS, George Edward	Pte.	...	...	Ulverston	D. of W.	8	1	17
20670	EVANS, Richard	Pte.	...	...	Chadderton, Lancs. ...	D. of W.	2	10	18
2190	FAIRCLOUGH, James	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	3	5	15
1440	FARRELL, Matthew	Pte.	...	...	Scotforth, Lancs. ...	K. in A.	14	4	15
241509	FAULKNER, Harry	Pte.	...	...	Milnthorpe, Westmoreland	K. in A.	20	9	17
12933	FEATHERSTONE, Charles	Pte	...	...	Eccleston, Lancs. ...	D. of W.	6	7	18
260046	FALL, John William	Pte.	...	...	Seaforth, Liverpool ...	K. in A.	20	9	17
3675	FELL, William Thomas Anderson...	Pte.	...	...	Ulverston	K. in A.	11	9	16
242493	FENN, Thomas Allen...	Pte.	...	..	Bury	K. in A.	22	5	18
242707	FERGUSON, Joseph Hugh	Pte.	...	...	Preston	K. in A.	9	4	18
1425	FERNLEY, Levi Garth	Pte.	...	...	Westwood, Oldham ...	K. in A.	9	8	16
22094	FIELDING, James Thomas	Pte.	...	...	Wigan	D. of W.	13	4	18
5584	FISHER, Edward	Pte.	...	...	Great Yarmouth, Norfolk	K. in A.	31	7	17
240792	FISHER, William	Sgt.		M.M.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	30	11	17
1548	FLEMING, George Frederick ...	Pte.	...	...	Carnforth	D. of W.	13	8	16
242476	FLETCHER, Thomas	Pte.	...	...	Bury	K. in A.	30	11	17
4028	FLOOD, John	Pte.	...	...	Blackpool	K. in A.	3	8	16
4124	FOREST, Richard	Pte.	...	...	Fleetwood	K. in A.	13	8	16
37627	FRANCOM, Arthur	Pte.	...	...	Liverpool	K. in A.	10	4	18
22970	GALLAGHER, Joseph	Pte.	..	...	Wigan	K. in A.	6	8	18
240176	GARDNER, Henry	Lce.-Cpl...		...	Preston	K. in A.	9	10	17
3921	GARDNER, John William	Pte.	..	...	Lancaster	D. of W.	18	12	16
454	GARDNER, John	Sgt.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	15
240989	GARNETT, John Hudson	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	16	6	17
201886	GARSIDE, Joseph	Pte.	...	...	Edinburgh	K. in A.	31	1	17

Digitized by Google

241577	GARTH, William	Cpl.	Slyne, Lancs.	K. in A.	10	4	18
3836	GERRARD, Alfred Henry	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	22	9	16
2479	GHORST, Harry	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	2	6	15
241422	GLAISTER, William	Pte.	Hensingham, Whiteh'v'n	K. in A.	2	5	18
34825	GLEESON, Owen	Pte.	Accrington	K. in A.	3	5	18
1297	GLOVER, Fred...	Pte.	Kendal	K. in A.	27	4	15
240323	GLOVER, Charles	Pte.	St. Thomas, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	11	2	17
1817	GORDON, Albert	Pte.	London	Died	29	8	14
30699	GOVER, Albert Edward	Pte.	Handsworth, Staffs. ...	K. in A.	14	4	18
300	GRADWELL, Anthony...	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	27	4	15
260040	GRAHAM, Matthew	Pte.	Liverpool	K. in A.	31	7	17
1254	GREEN, William	Cpl.	Wrea Green, Lancs. ...	K. in A.	10	9	16
24196	GREEN, Arthur	Pte.	Churchtown, Gastang, Lancs.	K. in A	9	5	18
2670	GREENWOOD, Mark Utley	Pte.	Poulton-le-Fylde	K. in A.	2	12	15
1019	GREGORY, Neill	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Madeley, Staffs. ...	K. in A.	1	8	16
1675	GRICE, Harry	Pte.	Scotforth, Lancs.... ...	K. in A.	27	4	15
2869	GRIFFITHS, Alfred	Pte.	Morecambe	K. in A.	2	10	15
242627	GRIMSEY, Frederick Raymond ...	Pte.	Buxton, Derbyshire ...	K. in A.	17	6	17
201853	GRISEDALE, James Cole	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	K. in A.	9	4	18
242677	HACKING, Samuel James	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Accrington	K. in A.	19	6	17
3915	HAGUE, Joseph Eugene	Pte.	Withington, Manchester..	D. of W.	4	8	16
3390	HALE, James	Pte.	Salford	K. in A.	10	7	18
30025	HALL, Henry Morton	Pte.	Patricroft, Manchester ...	K. in A.	11	4	18
242473	HALL, Fred	Pte.	Preston, Bolton	K. in A.	9	4	18
1373	HALLIWELL, Jack	Pte.	St. Luke's, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	27	4	15
1416	HALTON, Ernest	Pte.	Carnforth	Died	4	10	14
24986	HAMBLETT, Wilfred	Pte.	Ulverston	K. in A.	30	10	17

Digitized by Google

5057	HAMPSON, James Hiram	Pte.	Bolton	K. in A.	18	9	16
37741	HARGREAVES, Thomas William ...	Pte.	Bolton	K. in A.	14	4	18
3954	HARLEY, Herbert	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	14	7	16
2198	HARLOW, Ernest	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	5	15
999	HARPER, John Hurst...	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Christ Church, Lancaster	K. in A.	13	4	15
35988	HARRINGTON, William Arthur ...	Pte.	Garndifrith, Mon. ...	K. in A.	9	4	18
240692	HARRIS, Henry	Pte.	Sedbergh, Yorks... ...	D. of W.	6	8	18
242580	HARRIS, William Frederick ...	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Redminster, Bristol ...	K. in A.	31	7	17
240006	HARRISON, Leonard	A/C.Q.M.S. ...	Coventry	K. in A.	23	7	17
243113	HARTLEY, Fred	Lce.-Cpl... M.M.	Lancaster	K. in A.	30	11	17
1520	HARTLEY, Thomas	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	Died	11	3	15
1330	HAYES, Geoffrey	Pte.	Great Bedworth, Norwich	K. in A.	15	3	15
26811	HEDGES, Edward Robert	Lce.-Cpl... M.M.	Herne Hill, Surrey ...	Died	29	10	17
35989	HELLENS, Sidney	Pte.	Swansea	K. in A.	3	5	18
240976	HEPWORTH, Tom Denton	Cpl.	Morecambe	K. in A.	31	7	17
1978	HESKETH, Thomas	Pte.	Fleetwood	D. of W.	17	4	15
242635	HEWITT, Edmund	Pte.	Burnley	K. in A.	9	3	17
4912	HIGGINS, Thomas	Pte.	Bolton	K. in A.	5	9	16
240193	HIGGINSON, Samuel	Pte.	St. Thomas, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	8	5	15
3700	HIGGINSON, Henry	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	3	8	16
24452	HILL, Enoch	Pte.	Wimblebury, Staffs. ...	K. in A.	9	6	18
242573	HILL, Albert	Pte.	Hull	K. in A.	9	3	17
1617	HILL, Thomas...	Pte.	St. Paul's Blackpool ...	K. in A.	9	8	16
260011	HILLSLEY, George	Cpl.	Wimbledon	K. in A.	31	7	17
201880	HILTON, John...	Pte.	Blackburn	K. in A.	30	11	17
2034	HINE, Thomas Herdson	Pte.	Ambleside	K. in A.	27	4	15
2886	HINE, George Stanley	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Blackpool	D. of W.	9	8	16
27530	HODGSON, Harry	Pte.	Bolton	K. in A.	10	4	18

Digitized by Google

1228	HODGSON, Charles Walter	Pte.	St. John's, Lancaster ...	D. of W.	2	5	15
2883	HODGSON, Morris	Cpl.	Morecambe	K. in A.	15	8	16
2118	HOGGARTH, Edward...	Pte.	St. Paul's, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	3	5	15
263005	HODSON, Joseph M....	Pte.	Bolton	K. in A.	13	6	17
24601	HOLDING, Richard	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	30	11	17
2117	HOLDING, Frank	Pte.	St. Anne's, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	17	4	15
34749	HOLLINGWORTH, Bertie	Pte.	Skegness	D. of W.	11	4	18
242966	HOLMES, Richard	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Preston	K. in A.	30	11	17
242966	HOLT, William	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Preston	K. in A.	30	11	17
1963	HOLT, William Eccles	Sgt.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	10	9	16
240452	HORNBY, George	Cpl.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	1	8	17
1390	HORNBY, John William	Pte.	Marton	K. in A.	9	8	16
243125	HORROCKS, Samuel	Pte.	Bolton	K. in A.	17	6	16
1255	HOTHERSALL, Richard	Pte.	Newsham	D. of W.	17	4	15
242587	HOUSEAGO, Albert George Richard	Pte.	Norwich	K. in A.	30	11	17
241021	HOUGH, John	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	11	4	17
33433	HOWARD, George Frederick ...	Pte.	St. George's, Bristol ...	K. in A.	11	4	18
242267	HOWARD, William	Pte.	Bretherton	K. in A.	16	8	16
23182	HOWE, Charles George	Pte.	Greenwich	K. in A.	14	4	18
2194	HOWSON, John Robert	Pte.	Christchurch, Lancaster..	D. of W.	22	5	15
1741	HUARTSON, John	Pte.	St. Thomas, Lancaster ...	Died	30	9	14
2197	HUARTSON, Richard	Pte.	Christchurch, Lancaster..	K. in A.	23	4	15
242572	HUGHES, Sidney Leonard	Pte.	Tipton, Staffs.	D. of W.	12	4	17
242588	HUMPHRIES, Edward Victor ...	Pte.	Ipsley	D. of W.	3	8	17
2384	HUYTON, Henry	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	23	4	15
1221	IRVING, Henry	C.S.M.	Padiham	K. in A.	8	5	15
241455	IRVING, John	Pte.	Padiham	K. in A.	6	2	17
201304	ISHERWOOD, Albert	Pte.	Bolton	K. in A.	30	11	17

Digitized by Google

1012	ISMAY, John Thomas	Pte.	Preston	D. of W.	30	3	15
241255	JACKSON, Oliver	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	D. of W.	12	10	18
35005	JACKSON, John William	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	28	9	18
241224	JENKINSON, Thomas	Pte.	Blackpool	Died	8	4	17
2386	JENNINGS, Anthony	Pte.	Lancaster	Died	14	2	15
241989	JOHNSON, Wilfred	Pte.	Preston	K. in A.	21	7	17
29073	JOHNSON, James Henry	Pte.	Audenshaw, Manchester..	K. in A.	26	4	18
1687	JOHNSON, John	Pte.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	3	6	15
242600	JOHNSON, Thomas	Pte.	Buxton	K. in A.	2	8	17
28037	JOHNSON, William	Pte.	West Hartlepool	K. in A.	31	7	17
1505	JOHNSTON, John Septimus	Pte.	Halton, Lancs.	K. in A.	23	4	15
37750	KAVARSKY, Noel	Pte.	Leeds	K. in A.	13	5	18
1950	KEEN, George William	Pte.	Silverdale	K. in A.	16	8	15
1576	KEHOE, Edward	Pte.	Wrexford	K. in A.	5	5	15
24291	KENDALL, Edward	Pte.	Barrow	K. in A.	26	5	18
33951	KENDALL, Fred	Pte.	Hawcoat	K. in A.	30	11	17
242295	KERRIDGE, Harry	Pte.	Brierfield	K. in A.	16	8	16
1913	KEW, Thomas...	Pte.	South Kensington ...	K. in A.	24	4	15
1653	KEYWORTH, Victor	Pte.	Bolton	K. in A.	23	4	15
22977	KILGALLON, John Lee	Pte.	Warrington	K. in A.	9	4	18
21568	KIRBY, Robert	Pte.	Burnley	Died	5	11	17
376	KIRKBY, James Sarginson	A/Sgt.	Carnforth	K. in A.	3	5	15
243052	KIRKMAN, Thomas	Pte.	Ainsworth	K. in A.	11	3	17
28040	KIRTON, George	Pte.	Sedgfield	D. of W.	26	9	17
243024	KNOWLES, Albe	Pte.	Denton	K. in A.	16	9	17
3087	KNOWLES, John	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	15
241037	KELLSALL, John Frederick	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	3	4	17
241879	KEMP, Harry	Pte.	Norton, Herts.	K. in A.	9	9	17

Digitized by Google

48993	KENDALL, Benjamin	Pte.	Chester	D. of W.	11	12	18
240703	KEWLEY, Richard	Sgt.	Lancaster	K. in A.	28	9	18
5289	KIRBY, Edward	C.S.M.	Preston	Died	4	3	19
39078	KIRK, Stephen	Pte.	Tunstall	K. in A.	9	6	18
242160	LACY, Albert	Pte.	Normington	K. in A.	31	7	17
241167	LAMB, Charles	C.S.M.	Lancaster	D. of W.	13	3	17
3007	LAMB, James	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	20	10	16
243111	LANG, Robert H.	Pte.	Paisley	D. of W.	22	6	17
240334	LANGSTRETH, John	Pte.	Ulverston	K. in A.	15	9	17
541	LAWRENCE, John	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	15
30690	LAWSON, Frank	Pte.	Berkhampstead	D. of W.	23	4	18
24820	LEAK, Joseph	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	15	12	17
201935	LEAVER, Richard	Pte.	Burnley	K. in A.	31	7	17
2591	LEE, James Linsley	Pte.	Hull	K. in A.	3	6	15
26681	LEE, John	Pte.	Warton	D. of W.	10	8	18
242511	LEE, Stanley	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	K. in A.	9	3	17
201864	LEECH, Walter	Pte.	Appletreewick	K. in A.	30	11	17
1908	LENNON, Vernon	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	23	4	15
25423	LEWINGTON, Herbert	Pte.	London	K. in A.	20	11	17
28042	LEYBOURN, Joseph	Pte.	Winlaton	K. in A.	10	4	18
240432	LIVESEY, William	Sgt.	Salford	D. of W.	11	4	18
265138	LLOYD, Percy...	Pte.	Newport	K. in A.	1	4	18
40990	LOFTUS, John...	Pte.	York	K. in A.	16	6	18
2134	LOWE, Fred	Pte.	Monmouth	K. in A.	3	5	15
244110	LUND, Charles	Sgt.	Scotforth	K. in A.	4	10	16
242713	LUNN, John William	Pte.	Burnley	K. in A.	9	3	17
1353	LUPTON, Fred...	Pte.	St. John's, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	5	5	15
241488	LYDIATE, Harold	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Ashton-under-Lyne ...	K. in A.	9	3	17

Digitized by Google

3412	LYNES, Sidney George	Pte.		Feltwell	D. of W.	25	4	15
240168	LYNCH, William	Sgt.		Widnes	K. in A.	15	6	17
201905	LYONS, John William	Pte.		Nelson	Died	16	2	19
37538	LYONS, Thomas	Lce.-Cpl... ...		Manchester	K. in A.	10	7	18
240258	MAKINSON, Edward	Pte.		St. John's, Lancaster ...	K. in A.	30	11	17
265587	MANN, Edward	Pte.		Hyde	K. in A.	16	9	17
1222	MANSFIELD, Richard Edward ...	A/Cpl.		Winchester	K. in A.	4	5	15
1604	MANSFIELD, Richard...	Pte.		Preston	K. in A	8	5	15
200848	MARLAND, William	Lce.-Cpl...	M.M.	Preston	K. in A.	9	4	18
28047	MARSDEN, George	Pte.		Bradford	K. in A.	9	4	18
36543	MARSDEN, Henry	Pte.		Blackburn	K. in A.	2	5	18
24038	MARTIN, Robert L.	Pte.		Fleetwood	K. in A.	23	7	17
2161	MARTINDALE, William	Pte.		Millom	Died	26	9	14
260049	MATTHEWS, Albert Edward... ...	Pte.		Abergavenny	Died	15	5	18
4052	MATTINSON, Thomas Rawes ...	Pte.		Lancaster	K. in A.	9	8	16
5921	MAWSON, Harold	Pte.		Barrow	D. of W.	6	10	16
2152	MAWSON, James Radcliffe	Pte.		Windermere	D. of W.	24	4	15
27876	MAYNE, Samuel	Pte.		Hinckley	K. in A.	10	4	18
1648	MAYOR, Edmund	Lce.-Cpl... ...		Blackpool	K. in A.	10	9	16
24500	MCANDREW, Frank	Pte.		West Hartlepool	K. in A.	8	3	16
5619	MCCABE, Thomas	Pte.		Manchester	K. in A.	8	3	19
242497	MCDERMOTT, John	Pte.		Bolton	D. of W.	1	12	17
2038	MCGOWAN, Roland	Lce.-Cpl... ...		Dumfries	D. of W.	27	5	15
1958	MCGREEVY, John	Pte.		Fleetwood	K. in A.	10	9	16
1039	MCGREEVY, Peter	Pte.		Fleetwood	K. in A.	5	5	15
18258	MCLEAN, William	Pte.		Douglas, I. of M. ...	K. in A.	30	11	17
242988	MCSTRAVICK, Simon...	Pte.		Ulverston	D. of W.	11	10	18
1032	MCTIGUE, James	Pte.		Castlebar	K. in A.	4	5	15

Digitized by Google

4021	METCALFE, John	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	23	9	16
242450	METCALFE, John	Pte.	Salford	K. in A.	9	3	17
28055	MILBURN, Philip	Pte.	Wearhead	K. in A	20	9	17
2597	MILLARD, Arthur Henry	Pte.	Poulton-le-Fylde	D. of W.	6	5	15
28056	MILLER, Robert	Pte.	Roulmer	Died	30	4	18
26718	MILLINGTON, Frank	Pte.	Weaste	K. in A	10	4	18
2507	MILNER, Samuel	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	6	6	15
241562	MITCHELL, Alfred	Pte.	Kendal	D. of W.	15	6	17
3316	MOGG, Albert	Pte.	Sevenoaks	K. in A.	12	3	15
241280	MOLONEY, William Joseph	Pte.	Lancaster	Died	21	2	19
240529	MONKS, Frederick Victor	Cpl.	Lancaster	K. in A.	15	8	16
30930	MORRIS, Richard John	Lce.-Sgt... ...	Brampton Abbott ...	Died	11	9	19
1014	MOSS, G.	Pte.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	5	5	15
1967	MOUNTAIN, Thomas	Cpl.	Fleetwood	D. of W.	17	10	16
5575	MURRAY, William	Pte.	Barrow	D. of W.	12	8	17
28058	MUSGRAVE, John William	Pte.	Durham	D. of W.	17	3	18
2134	NASH, Joseph...	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	13	4	15
2397	NELSON, David	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	9	5	15
240012	NELSON, George Edward	C.Q.M.S.. ...	Bradford, York	Died	14	6	18
22060	NEWTON, Johnson	Pte.	Sunderland	K. in A.	10	4	18
1771	NEWTON, Joseph	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	D. of W.	7	5	15
201855	NICHOLSON, Reuben...	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Lancaster	K. in A.	20	9	17
243059	NICKSON, Robert William	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Barrow	K. in A.	3	10	18
201915	NUTTALL, Richard	Pte.	Rawtenstall	Died	18	12	17
37250	O'BRIEN, Frederick	Pte.	Manchester	Died	8	11	19
1921	OGDEN, John	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	16	4	15
242642	ORMESHER, Edward Henry... ...	Pte.	Manchester	K. in A.	30	11	17
1379	OSBORNE, William Henry	Pte.	Derby	D. of W	9	5	15

Digitized by Google

934	OWEN, David	...	Pte.	...	...	Skerton	K. in A.	5	5	15
26724	PALMER, Charles	...	Pte.	...	...	Salford	K. in A.	9	4	18
242650	PARBERY, John	...	Pte.	...	...	Northampton	K. in A.	3	8	17
2321	PARKINSON, Arthur	...	Pte.	...	...	Garstang	K. in A.	23	4	15
242710	PARKINSON, Albert	...	Pte.	...	...	London	K. in A.	30	11	17
241895	PARR, William	...	Pte.	...	...	Morecambe	D. of W.	22	9	17
28146	PATTERSON, David	...	Pte.	...	...	Skerton	K. in A.	3	5	18
40994	PEARSON, George Henry ...	...	Pte.	...	...	North Wingfield	K. in A.	9	5	18
2786	PEDDAR, William	...	Pte.	...	...	Carnforth	D. of W.	4	8	16
34038	PENNY, David...	...	Pte.	...	...	Hesk Dale...	K. in A.	30	11	17
2403	PENRITH, Herbert	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	9	8	16
241510	PENRITH, Louis	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	Died	23	7	17
241213	PHILLIPSON, Isaac	...	Pte.	...	M.M.	Lancaster	D. of W.	9	12	17
32530	PICKOVER, Harry	...	Pte.	...	...	Nelson	D. of W.	14	10	18
242685	PICKTHALL, Mark	...	Pte.	...	...	Askam-in-Furness ...	K. in A.	20	9	17
202647	PICKUP, Fred	...	Pte.	...	...	Accrington	K. in A.	10	7	16
34781	POLKINGHORN, Richard ...	...	Pte.	...	...	Bardsea	K. in A.	20	9	17
34804	POPE, Frank	...	Pte.	...	...	Leeds	K. in A.	30	11	17
1193	PORTER, Charles	...	Lce.-Cpl...	...	...	Rochdale	K. in A.	8	5	15
202322	PORTER, Arthur	...	Pte.	...	...	Manchester	D. of W.	5	12	17
242069	PRESTON, Willie Holme ...	...	Pte.	...	...	Priestley	K. in A.	5	7	17
1674	PRINCE, John Thomas ...	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	15
34606	PROCTER, Frederick	...	Pte.	...	...	Morecambe	K. in A.	17	9	17
27346	PURVIS, Joseph Slater ...	...	Lce.-Cpl...	...	...	Portobello	K. in A.	3	5	18
1296	PYE, John Richard	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	8	5	15
785	PYE, John	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	15
19081	QUIGLEY, Christopher ...	...	Cpl.	...	...	Dublin	K in A	3	5	18
28066	RAFFEL, John William ...	...	Pte.	...	...	Low Fell	K. in A.	20	9	17

Digitized by Google

24288	RANDALL, Harold	...	...	...	Act.-Cpl...	...	Manchester	...	...	Died	28 8 19
241640	RAWCLIFFE, John James	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Mythop	...	...	D. of W.	11 8 17
240874	RAWLINSON, Thomas	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Lancaster	...	...	Died	2 11 18
241494	RAWNSLEY, Leonard...	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Morecambe	...	...	K. in A.	2 8 17
1342	RAY, William ...	...	...	...	Lce.-Sgt...	...	Cockermouth	...	...	Died	5 11 15
22362	READER, John	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Notting Hill	...	...	K. in A.	9 3 18
11343	REILLEY, Ernest	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Shrewsbury	...	...	K. in A.	10 4 18
240129	RENSHAWL, Peter	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Lancaster	...	...	K. in A.	12 3 17
14923	RICHARDS, Fred	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Oldham	...	...	K. in A.	23 4 19
38540	RIGG, Septimus	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Dalton	...	...	K. in A.	1 10 18
4369	RIMMER, Thomas Miller	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Fleetwood	...	...	K. in A.	16 8 16
2159	RIPPER, Allen Gilbert	...	...	...	Lce.-Cpl...	...	Lancaster	...	...	K. in A.	8 5 15
4146	RICHIE, William	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Lancaster	...	...	K. in A.	25 6 16
241461	ROBERTS, William	...	...	...	Cpl. ...	...	Glossop	...	...	K. in A.	28 7 17
1308	ROBINSON, Thomas ...	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Lancaster	...	...	K. in A.	14 4 15
4193	ROBINSON, Walter	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Kendal	...	...	D. of W.	4 8 16
3080	ROBINSON, Walter	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Ulverston	...	...	K. in A.	3 8 16
1749	ROOCROFT, Thomas ...	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Preston	...	...	K. in A.	3 8 16
34607	ROPER, William Woof	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Lancaster	...	...	K. in A.	14 4 18
4141	ROSE, James ...	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Fleetwood	...	...	K. in A.	10 9 16
241630	ROSENBERG, Bernard	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Glasgow	...	...	K. in A.	20 9 17
2616	ROSKELL, Richard	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Fleetwood	...	...	K. in A.	7 5 15
240819	ROSSALL, William	...	...	...	Lce.-Cpl. .	...	Lancaster	...	...	K. in A.	1 8 17
201927	ROSTRON, George	...	...	...	Lce.-Cpl...	...	Chorley	...	...	K. in A.	30 11 17
1818	ROURKE, Hugh	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Liverpool	...	...	K. in A.	13 3 15
40997	ROWLAND, John William	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Derby	...	...	K. in A.	10 10 18
2897	ROWLANDSON, William	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Ulverston	...	...	D. of W.	2 10 16
5051	ROYLE, George	...	...	...	Pte. ...	...	Stockport	...	...	K. in A.	13 12 16

Digitized by Google

3946	SALTHOUSE, Harold	Pte.	Lytham	Died	15	9	16
1990	SALTHOUSE, Sheard	Pte.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	5	5	15
1995	SALTHOUSE, Hall Sheard	Pte.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	4	5	15
22819	SAMUEL, Benjamin	Pte.	Merthyr	K. in A.	30	11	17
668	SANDALL, George	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	15	8	16
1572	SANDERSON, Edward...	Pte.	Manchester	K. in A.	9	8	16
4130	SANDERSON, Alfred S.	Pte.	Dewsbury	K. in A.	1	8	16
901	SANDHAN, Albert	Cpl.	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	5	15
243102	SANDHAM, John	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Darwen	K. in A.	31	7	17
240247	SANDERSON, Robert	C.S.M.	Blackpool	K. in A.	20	9	17
35700	SCALES, John Clement	Pte.	Millom	K. in A.	9	4	18
34434	SCARRY, Martin	Pte.	Salford	K. in A.	20	2	19
260018	SCOTT, Frank	Pte.	London	D. of W.	2	1	18
5041	SEDDON, Robert	Pte.	Westhoughton	K. in A.	11	11	16
24957	SHARPLES, Walter	Pte.	Mellor	D. of W.	9	5	18
37151	SHAW, Lawrence	Pte.	Salford	K. in A.	7	8	18
14566	SHEPHERD, Joseph	Pte.	Maryport	D. of W.	7	5	18
40380	SHEPHERD, William	Pte.	Barrow	D. of W.	16	8	16
1485	SHEPHERD, William Leo-	Pte.	Blackpool	K. in A.	18	9	16
28072	SHEPHERD, Thomas W. A.	Pte.	West Hartlepool	K. in A.	28	7	17
26680	SHUTTLEWORTH, Albert	Pte.	Lancaster	D. of W.	22	4	18
3078	SHUTTLEWORTH, George	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	4	5	15
5053	SEDDON, Arthur	Pte.	Farnworth	D. of W.	22	9	16
243055	SIGHE, Edward	Pte.	Liverpool	D. of W.	10	3	17
16908	SILCOCK, Edward	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Westhoughton	Died	10	4	18
1261	SIMMONS, Richard	Pte.	Fleetwood	D. of W.	24	5	15
1515	SIMPSON, James	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	23	4	15
2210	SIMPSON, John	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	4	5	15

Digitized by Google

22804	SINES, William John	...	Pte.	...	Battersea	...	D. of W.	13	4	18
32637	SINGLETON, John	...	Pte.	...	Kirkham	...	K. in A.	30	11	17
242656	SIZER, William	...	Pte.	...	Witton, Norfolk	...	D. of W.	1	8	17
24776	SLATER, Joseph	...	Pte.	...	Lindal-in-Furness	...	K. in A.	23	7	17
29113	SLATER, Nelson	...	Pte.	...	Blackburn	...	K. in A.	3	5	18
568	SLATER, Thomas	...	Pte.	...	Garstang	...	K. in A.	23	4	15
9734	SMITH, Cecil	...	Sgt.	...	Ipswich	...	K. in A.	9	3	17
29115	SMITH, Thomas	...	Pte.	...	Bury	...	K. in A.	3	5	18
242446	SMITH, Thomas	...	Pte.	...	Barrow	...	D of W.	10	3	17
1060	SMITH, William	...	Act.-Sgt.	...	Nelson	...	K. in A.	8	8	15
2524	SMITH, William Henry	...	Pte.	...	Lancaster	...	D of W.	18	4	15
1026	SNAPE, Richard	...	Pte.	...	Fleetwood	...	D. of W.	11	5	15
3803	SOUTH, James	...	Pte.	...	Accrington	...	K. in A.	3	8	16
2016	SPARKS, Joseph	...	Pte.	...	Hull	...	K. in A.	8	5	15
26683	SQUIRES, Robert	...	Lce.-Cpl.	...	Skerton	...	D. of W.	4	5	18
37784	STABLES, Moses	...	Pte.	...	Dalton	...	K. in A.	20	9	17
240628	STAMPER, Reginald	...	Pte.	...	Lancaster	...	D. of W.	23	4	15
241486	STANDON, Edward B.	...	Sgt.	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	9	4	18
3953	STANLEY, Thomas	...	Pte.	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	15	8	16
241613	STEAD, Norman	...	Pte.	...	Blackpool	...	K. in A.	30	11	17
242701	STEELE, Albert	...	Pte.	...	Ulverston	...	D. of W.	16	9	17
27308	STEELS, Jim	...	Pte.	...	Legsby, Lincs.	...	K. in A.	20	9	17
4107	STEPHENSON, James	...	Pte.	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	3	8	16
2251	STIRZAKER, Charles	...	Pte.	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	29	3	15
1429	Stoddart, William	...	Pte.	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	8	5	15
1144	STANDEN, Walter W.	...	Pte.	...	Lancaster	...	K. in A.	23	4	15
263015	STOKES, Frank	...	Pte.	...	Stockport	...	K. in A.	30	11	17
2021	STONES, James	...	Pte.	...	Manchester	...	K. in A.	4	5	15

Digitized by Google

242643	STOREY, Matthew S.	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Burnley	...	...	...	K. in A.	20	9	17
2709	STRICKLAND, William	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Fleetwood	...	...	...	K. in A.	8	5	15
38109	STURZAKER, John Robert	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	K. in A.	24	8	18
290	SUMMER, Reuben	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	K. in A.	17	10	16
40999	SWALLOW, William Henry	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Kirkheaton	...	...	...	K. in A.	23	4	18
28531	TAYLOR, Salter	...	...	Pte.	...	...	West Derby	...	...	...	K. in A.	1	10	18
3979	TATTERSALL, James	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Bacup	...	...	...	K. in A.	10	9	16
240144	TEDCASTLE, Walter	...	...	Sgt.	...	...	Kendal	...	...	...	K. in A.	20	9	17
1966	TESTER, Thomas	...	...	Lce.-Cpl.	...	...	Fleetwood	...	...	...	K. in A.	5	5	15
1682	TETLEY, Lawrence	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Blackburn	...	...	...	K. in A.	5	5	15
1324	THEOBALD, William Henry	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	K. in A.	23	4	15
2933	THRELFALL, James Henry	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Morecambe	...	...	...	D. of W.	19	8	16
2176	THRELFALL, Robert	...	...	Sgt.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	K. in A.	27	5	15
2803	THWAITES, Joseph	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Ambleside	...	...	...	D. of W.	12	5	15
241781	TIMBRELL, William Henry	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Arnside	...	...	...	D. of W.	22	9	17
2217	THOMAS, Mortimer	...	...	Lce.-Cpl.	...	...	London	...	...	...	D. of W.	9	6	15
18416	TOMLINSON, James	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Warrington	...	...	...	K. in A.	24	8	18
5919	TOMLINSON, John Richard	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Bolton	...	...	...	K. in A.	16	10	16
241215	THOMPSON, John	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	K. in A	16	10	16
2056	THOMPSON, Leonard	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Headstone	...	...	...	D. of W.	29	4	15
24119	THOMPSON, Percy	...	...	Lce.-Cpl.	...	...	Blackpool	...	...	...	K. in A.	30	11	17
36510	THOMPSON, Thomas Sidney	...		Pte.	...	...	Dockery	...	...	...	K. in A.	9	4	18
2426	THORNTON, James Marsh	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	K. in A.	8	5	15
1654	TOLMIN, John	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Morecambe	...	...	...	Died	22	5	16
348	TOWERS, Joseph Edward	...	...	Sgt.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	K. in A.	15	8	16
1244	TOWERS, Oswald	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	D. of W.	15	4	15
2215	TOWERS, Thomas	...	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	D. of W.	26	4	15
24516	TOWNSON, Thomas	..	...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	...	...	...	D. of W.	5	12	17

Digitized by Google

1667	TURNER, John...	Pte.	Southport	K in A.	19	5	15
21282	TURNER, Tom Oliver	Pte.	Dukinfield	K. in A.	10	7	18
1591	TYRRELL, William	Pte.	Lancaster	K in A.	3	10	16
24861	WADDINGTON, Robert	Pte.	Brierfield	D. of W.	14	3	17
30693	WAITE, Edward	Pte.	Earby	K. in A.	24	8	18
1381	WAITE, Henry Ernest	Pte.	Morecambe...	K. in A.	23	4	15
41003	WALKER, Albert	Pte.	London	D. of W.	1	8	18
12424	WALKER, Edward	Sgt.	Radford	K. in A.	14	4	18
201895	WALKER, William	Pte.	Brierfield	K. in A.	2	8	17
1655	WALLS, William	Pte.	Morecambe	K. in A.	8	3	15
240882	WALMSLEY, Edward	Pte.	Wakefield	K. in A.	30	11	17
93	WALLBANK, Richard	Sgt.	Lancaster	K. in A.	4	5	15
1486	WALMSLEY, John	Lce.-Cpl... ...	Chorley	K. in A.	26	4	15
260043	WALMSLEY, John Herbert	Pte.	Liverpool	K. in A.	31	7	17
241544	WALSH, James	Pte.	Barrow	K. in A.	9	4	18
1091	WALTON, James	Pte.	Preston	Died	4	10	14
2342	WARD, James...	Pte.	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	15
260027	WARDLE, Albert Arthur	Pte.	Hampstead	K. in A.	20	9	17
29130	WARRINER, James William ...	Pte.	Manchester	D. of W.	24	8	18
1621	WARWICK, Louis	Pte.	Horwich	K. in A.	8	5	15
5953	WATERHOUSE, William T.	Pte.	Glossop	K. in A.	22	9	16
28077	WATSON, Harold	Pte.	Casby	D. of W.	26	7	18
240774	WATT, Alexander	Pte.	Fleetwood	K. in A.	20	9	17
34584	WEBB, George...	Pte.	Liverpool	K. in A.	30	11	17
21518	WEBSTER, George	Pte.	Bolton	D. of W.	2	12	17
242690	WEBSTER, Henry	Pte.	Askam	K. in A.	24	4	17
2632	WEEDON, Thomas	Pte.	Fleetwood	D. of W.	15	5	15
240955	WHITEHEAD, Cyril	Pte.	Morecambe...	D. of W.	22	6	17

Digitized by Google

2810	WHITESIDE, Christopher	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	14	4	15
41007	WHITMORE, Frederick Oliver ...	Pte.	...	...	Burslem	K. in A	3	5	18
26940	WHITMORE, Percival Charles ...	Pte.	...	...	Southwark...	D. of W.	16	6	18
1298	WILCOCK, John	Pte.	...	...	Glasgow	K. in A	8	5	15
2635	WILKINSON, George	Pte.	...	...	Preston	K. in A.	27	4	15
41008	WILKINSON, James Henry	Pte.	...	...	Howden	K. in A.	4	10	18
240316	WILKINSON, Thomas	Sgt.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	30	11	17
1696	WILLACY, Thomas	Pte.	...	...	Morecambe...	D of W.	3	4	16
32650	WILSON, George Myles	Pte.	...	...	Borwick	D of W.	20	9	17
35694	WILSON, James	Pte.	...	...	Preston	D. of W.	13	4	18
2182	WILSON, John...	Pte.	...	...	Skerton	K. in A.	3	5	15
260041	WILSON, John	Pte.	...	...	Liverpool	K. in A.	30	11	17
241176	WILSON, John...	Cpl.	...	...	Carnforth	K. in A.	30	11	17
240395	WILSON, Sam	Cpl.	...	...	Burton	K. in A.	9	3	17
3575	WILSON, Thomas James	Pte.	...	...	Blackpool	K in A.	3	8	16
29136	WILSON, William Arnold	Pte.	...	...	Rochdale	D. of W.	26	10	18
2213	WINDER, Edward	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	3	5	15
2456	WINDER, Henry	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	27	4	15
252657	WOOD, Moses...	Pte.	...	...	Darwen	D. of W.	2	12	17
4009	WOODHOUSE, Allen	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	1	8	16
2173	WOODS, John...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	26	4	15
201948	WOOD, John	Pte.	...	...	Haslingden	K. in A.	29	7	17
260025	WOOLEY, William Thomas... ...	Pte.	...	...	Rotherhithe	D. of W.	13	5	18
242269	WORTHY, Frank	Pte.	...	...	Waterfoot	K. in A.	11	7	17
2037	WRIGHT, Douglas C....	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	23	4	15
4113	WRIGHT, William	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	3	8	16
1928	WRIGHT, William Thomas... ...	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	3	5	15
2178	YATES, George	Pte.	...	...	Lancaster	K. in A.	15	8	16

Digitized by Google

We left them where we loved them with the love
that would not weep,
But a deathless, fierce conviction of a solemn charge
to keep,
And the God of Love remembers all the men we laid
to sleep.

From "The Crosses," Lieut.-Col. E. G. Hoare, D.S.O.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

SECTORS OF THE BRITISH FRONT
HELD BY

THE 1/5TH THE KING'S OWN
1915 - 1918.

=·=·= FRONT LINE APR. 22ND 1915.
– – – " " JULY 1ST 1916.
–··–··– " " MAR. 21ST 1918.
——— " " MAY 1ST 1918.
–·–·– " " AUG. 25TH 1918.
++++++ LINE OF BATTN ADVANCE OCT.-NOV. 1918.

ROULLERS
LANGEMARCK
PASSCHENDAELE
PROVEN
ELVERDINGHE
1917
WIELTJE
ST. JEAN
FREZENBERG
ZONNEBEKE
1915
POLYGON WOOD
EDEWARDEHOEK
WATOU
POPERINGHE
VLAMERTINGHE
YPRES
WINNEZEELE
1915
ZILLEBEKE
SANCTUARY WOOD
OUDERDOM
RYVELT
STEENVOORDE
RENINGHELST
LA CLYTTE
MENIN
CASSEL
BOESCHEPE
WESTOUTRE
SCHERPENBERG
KEMMEL
WYTSCHAETE
LOCRE
DRANOUTRE
1915
MESSINES
ST. JANS-CAPPEL
WULVERGHEM
RAVETSBERG
NEUVE EGLISE
BAILLEUL
OUTTERSTEENE
HAZEBROUCK
ARMENTIERES
MERVILLE
LILLE
ATH
ST. AMAND
TOURNAI
LEUZE
ROBECQ
ESPLECHIN
FROIDMONT
CHERCQ
MARAIS DE LA LOUVIERE
RAMECROIX
ERE
ST. MAUR
WILLEMEAU
LOCON
LATTRE
WAVRIN
LILLERS
HINGES
GONNEHEM
LE TOURET
ILLIES
SAINGHIN
GONDICOURT
TEMPLEMARS
CYSOING
PERONNE
BOURGHELLES
ECQUEDECQUES
GLATIGNIES
LOISNE
MARQUILLES
LAPLACE
LORGIES
DON
SECLIN
FRETIN
CHOCQUES
ESSARS
1918
FESTUBERT
HERRIN
ALLENNES
GRAND ENNETIÈRES
LA BASSÉE
BETHUNE
GIVENCHY
BEUVRY
CUINCHY
CAMBRIN
FRANCE
BELGIUM
FRONTIER
VAUDRICOURT
DROUVIN
LABOURSE
HOUCHIN
NŒUX LES MINES
VERMELLES
HULLUCH
BRUAY
MAZINGARBE
1915
LOOS
TINQUES
SAVY
AUBIGNY
DOUAI
VALENCIENNES
ARRAS
AVESNES LE COMTE
1916
SIMENCOURT
AGNY
WAILLY
GOUY
BEAUMETZ
MONCHIET
RIVIÈRE
BRETENCOURT
BAVINCOURT
BELLACOURT
BASSEUX
BLAIREVILLE
SAULTY
LARBRET
RANSART
LA HERLIÈRE
BERLES AU BOIS
POMMIER
CAMBRAI
MARCOING
LE CATEAU
BAPAUME
1917
MIRAUMONT
BEAULENCOURT
GUEUDECOURT
LE TRANSLOY
BANTEUX
FLERS
VILLERS GUISLAIN
HIGH WOOD
DELVILLE WOOD
1916
GINCHY
LONGUEVAL
GUILLEMONT
NURLU
EPEHY
TRONES WOOD
FRICOURT
MAMETZ
MONTAUBAN
ALBERT
TALUS BOISÉ
1917
AIZECOURT LE BAS
ST EMILIE
BECORDEL
CARNOY
FAVIERE WOOD
VILLERS FAUCON
MEAULTE
DERNAUCOURT
MARICOURT
LONGAVESNES
RIBEMONT
VILLE SUR ANCRE
ROISEL
HEILLY
MERICOURT
HAMEL
TINCOURT
PERONNE
FLAMICOURT

SCALE - MILES
0 5 10 15 20

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google